

# ELPIS ISRAEL

(THE HOPE OF ISRAEL)

BEING AN EXPOSITION OF  
THE KINGDOM OF GOD,  
WITH REFERENCE TO  
THE TIME OF THE END,  
AND OF THE AGE TO COME

by

JOHN THOMAS, MD,

AUTHOR OF "EUREKA" ETC.

"For the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain"  
— Paul.

Build by whatever plan Caprice decrees,  
With what materials, on what ground you please;  
But know, that ISRAEL'S HOPE alone shall stand,  
Which Paul proclaimed in Rome to ev'ry man.

# CONTENTS

## Part First

### THE RUDIMENTS OF THE WORLD

CH. 1. — The necessity of a Revelation to make known the origin, reason, and tendency of things in relation to man and the world around him. It is an intelligible mystery, and the only source of true wisdom; but which is practically repudiated by the Moderns. — The study of the Bible urged, to facilitate and promote which is the object of this volume .....	1
CH. 2. — The earth before the creation of Adam the habitation of the angels who kept not their first estate — A geological error corrected — The Sabbath day and the Lord's day — The formation of man and woman — The "great mystery" of her formation out of man explained — Eden — The garden of Eden — The original and future paradises considered — Man's primitive dominion confined to the inferior creatures and his own immediate family — Of the two trees of the garden — And man in his original estate .....	10
CH. 3. — Probation before exaltation, the law of the moral universe of God — The temptation of the Lord Jesus by Satan, the trial of his faith by the Father — The Temptation explained — God's foreknowledge does not necessitate; nor does He justify, or condemn, by anticipation — The Serpent an intellectual animal, but not a moral agent, nor inspired — He deceives the woman — The nature of the transgression — Eve becomes the tempter to Adam — The transgression consummated in the conception of Cain — A good conscience, and an evil conscience, defined — Man cannot cover his own sin — The carnal mind illustrated by the reasoning of the Serpent — It is metaphorically the Serpent in the flesh — God's truth the only rule of right and wrong — The Serpent in the flesh is manifested in the wickedness of individuals; and in the spiritual and temporal institutions of the world — Serpent-sin in the flesh identified with "the Wicked One" — The Prince of the World — The kingdom of Satan and the World identical — The Wiles of the Devil — The " <i>Prince</i> " shown to be <i>sin</i> , working and reigning in all sinners — How he was "cast out" by Jesus — "The works of the Devil" — "Bound of Satan;" delivering to Satan — The Great Dragon — The Devil and Satan — The Man of Sin .....	75
CH. 4. — The trial of the Transgressors — Of the Literal and the Allegorical — The sentence upon the Serpent particularized — The "Peace and Safety" cry — Jesus came not to send peace, but a sword	

## CONTENTS

— The Peace Society the enemy of God — Cain, Abel, and Seth — Atheism defined — Cain rejected as the progenitor of the Woman's seed, and Seth appointed — The Antediluvian apostasy — The Cainites and Sethites distinct societies — Their union the ruin of the old world, of which eight sons of Seth only survive — The Foundation of the World — The sentence upon Woman — Her social position defined — The sentence upon Adam — The constitution of sin — Of sin as a physical quality of the flesh — Of the hereditary nature of Jesus — Of "original sin" — Men, sinners in a two-fold sense — The Constitution of Righteousness — Men become saints by adoption — The Three Witnesses — The "new birth" explained — The Two Principles — Of "the light within" — The scripture revelation the divine principle of illumination — The awful condition of "the church" — Of the Hidden Man of the heart. .... 109

CH. 5. — Immortality in the present state a positive evil — Immortality in misery unscriptural — The professing world religious from fear — The world's religions useful as a system of Ecclesiastical Police — The Religion of Christ destitute of all worldly goods till his return, when it will possess all things — The doctrine of immortality a divine revelation — The Heathens baffled in their endeavors to discover it — The Mosaic Cherubim God's throne in Israel — The Cherubim of Ezekiel and John — The Cherubic Veil — The Faces of the Lord — The Flaming Sword — Illustrated by Ezekiel's description of the glory of the God of Israel — The brightness of the Spiritual Body — The Way of the Tree of Life — The etymology of the word RELIGION — False religion based upon the idea of appeasing the wrath of God — God already reconciled to the world — The "Word of Reconciliation" committed to the apostles in the beginning — The apostles the only ambassadors of Christ — "The word" preached by the apostles entrusted to the disciples of Christ — "Clergy" and "Laity" distinctions of the apostasy — Religion defined — Its grand desideratum — No true religion without belief of the Truth — The word "faith" scripturally defined — How faith comes — The "religious world" infidel of "the faith" — "Love" scripturally defined by "obedience" — The religious world destitute of the Spirit of God — Religion contemporary only with sin — Summary of principles ..... 146

CH. 6. — God the builder of all things — Nothing accidental, but all things the result of divine premeditation — Whatever exists He created for His own pleasure and glory — The purpose of God in the work of creation and providence, revealed in the scriptures — The present order of things merely provisional — The economy of the fulness of appointed times the true "Intermediate State" of a thousand years' duration — The tower of Babel builders, peacemen, and socialists — The principle upon which men attain to the angelic

## CONTENTS

nature, and dignity, defined — God's two-fold purpose in the foundation of the world stated — The means by which it is accomplishing — Dissertation on the Elohim .....	176
---	-----

## Part Second

### THE THINGS OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD, AND THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST

CH. 1. — The truth indicated — None but the believers of the truth can inherit the Kingdom of God — Abraham, "the Heir of the World" — To inherit with him, men must believe what he believed; and become his children by adoption through Jesus Christ — The gospel and the things of the Kingdom one and the same — It was preached to Abraham, Israel, and the Gentiles, by the Lord God, by Moses, by Jesus, and by the Apostles — Gospel things susceptible of a threefold classification — The Keys of the Kingdom — Entrusted only to Peter — The Mystery of the Kingdom — The Fellowship of the Mystery — "Apostolic Succession" — Qualifications of an apostle of Christ — Import of the phrase "the end of the world" — "The sign" of its approach — The gospel preached to every creature by the Apostles — Modern missionaryism inadequate to the end proposed .....	192
--	-----

CH. 2. — Five points of prophetic testimony — The general elements of a kingdom constituents of the kingdom of Christ — The promise made of God to the fathers, the hope of Israel, and the gospel, the same — Who the fathers are — Abram originally from Babel, and an idolator — The Lord preaches the gospel to him in Mesopotamia — He believes it, and emigrates westward in consequence — Becomes a wanderer in the land of Canaan, which is promised to him and Christ for ever — His faith counted to him for righteousness — The promise of a resurrection to eternal life — Confirmation of the covenant of promise — The extent of the land defined in the Will — The personal reappearance of Christ necessitated by the nature of things — The phrases "in thee," "in him," and "in thy seed," explained — The nations God's people in no sense — Abraham, Christ, and the saints, "heirs of the world." — The token of the covenant — The signification of circumcision — Modern Israel under the curse of the law — Circumcision of the heart — The Allegory — The two seeds — Parable of the Seed — Summary of Abraham's faith .....	224
---	-----

CH. 3. — The gospel preached to Isaac — The election of Jacob — The scripture doctrine of election — Not according to popular tradition — How men are elected, and how they may know it — Esau hated — Vision of Jacob's Ladder — Jacob's care for his body after death — Joseph's anxiety about his bones — Jacob's prophecy of the	
--	--

## CONTENTS

Last Days — Summary of “the faith” at Joseph’s death — Things established — Chronology of the Age before the Law ..... 268

CH. 4. — State of Egypt and Israel before the exodus — The time of the promises arrives — Call of Moses — God’s everlasting memorial — Moses is sent to Israel — He is accepted as ruler and deliverer — He declares glad tidings to them; but they refuse to listen — The Exodus — Israel baptized into Moses — The song of victory — They are fed with angels’ food — The Lord’s passover — How to be fulfilled in the kingdom of God — The Lord’s supper — The Twelve Tribes constituted the kingdom of God — The gospel preached to Israel — They reject it — Of the Rest — The Royal House of the kingdom — “The sure mercies of David” — The kingdom and throne of David — David’s kingdom also God’s kingdom under its first constitution — Chronology to the captivity ..... 293

CH. 5. — Israel unable to redeem themselves; and the nations equally powerless to their own regeneration — The reconstruction of the social fabric the work of Omnipotence by the hand of the Lord Jesus at his approaching manifestation — He will re-establish the kingdom and throne of David — The priesthood of Shiloh — The Ezekiel temple to be built by Christ — Of the Name of Jesus — Of repentance, remission of sins, and eternal life — Death-bed, and gaol, repentance ..... 317

## Part Third

### THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD IN THEIR RELATION TO THE KINGDOM OF GOD

CH. 1. — The pandemonianism of the world — The Press, its organs to a great extent — Its conductors greatly deficient in political prevision — A divine agency the real source of the world’s revolutions — God hath revealed what shall come to pass — Nebuchadnezzar’s Image explained — It represents an Autocracy to be manifested in these Latter Days — The Toe-kingdoms enumerated — The Vision of the Four Beasts — Of the Saints and the two Witnesses ..... 331

CH. 2. — The Sin-power in its war against the seed of the woman in the west, symbolized by the Beasts and their Image — God will surely avenge His saints — The crimes for which the nations are to be judged, stated — The geography of the “Lake of Fire” where the judgment sits — The saints the executioners of the Little Horn — They are raised from political death for this purpose — Events connected with their resurrection — The three days and a half of their

# CONTENTS

unburied state, explained — Their ascension — End of 1260 years —  
Of the time of the Beast — Diagram of the 1335 years ..... 362

CH. 3. — Doings of the Witnesses when invested with power — They  
execute justice on their enemies — A great earthquake — The seventh  
trumpet — Divided into seven vial-periods — The third, fourth, and  
fifth, vials, and Napoleon — England and the second vial — Turkey  
and the sixth vial — All Europe and the seventh vial — The prophecy  
of the Frogs explained — The mission of the unclean spirits — Their  
operation the sign of Christ's stealthy and sudden return — The great  
desideratum in view of the Advent ..... 375

CH. 4. — The vision and prophecy of the East — Of the Ram and the  
Unicorn — The Four Horns of the Goat — Of the fifth, or Little, Horn  
— Of the Seventy Weeks — Of the 1290 years — Summary of the  
eleventh of Daniel — Paraphrase of the first thirty-five verses of  
Dan. 11 — Of the king and the strange god — Mahuzzim-Bazaars .. 401

CH. 5. — It is impossible that the Holy Land can be for ever subject  
to the Gentiles — It is to be wrested from them in the crisis of "the  
time of the end" — Of Daniel's 2400 days — Diagram of Daniel's  
times — Of the beginning of "the time of the end" — Of the king of  
the south at that time — The Autocrat of Russia the king of the north  
in "the time of the end" — England and the Jews — Of Gogue and  
Magogue — Ezekiel's and John's two different and remote  
confederacies — Daniel's king of the north of "the time of the end,"  
and Gogue of "the latter days," the same — The Gogue of Ezekiel  
proved to be Emperor of Germany and Autocrat of all the Russias —  
Gomer and the French — Sheba, Dedan, the Merchants of Tarshish 425  
and its young lions, identified as the British power .....

CH. 6. — The restoration of Israel indispensable to the setting up of  
the kingdom of God — Israel to be grafted into their own olive on a  
principle of faith — Not by Gentile agency, but by Jesus Christ, will  
God graft them in again — Britain, the protector of the Jews, as  
indicated by Isaiah 18 — The British power in the south, the Moab  
&c, of "the latter days" — The second exodus of Israel — The nations  
of the Image to be subdued by Israel to the dominion of their king —  
The New Covenant delivered to Judah and the kingdom of God set up  
in Judea — The returning of the Ten Tribes to Canaan will occupy  
forty years — Elijah's mission — Israel re-assembled in Egypt —  
They cross the Nile, and pass through the Red Sea, on foot — They  
march into Canaan, receive the New Covenant, and, re-united to  
Judah, form one nation and kingdom under Christ for 1,000 years —  
The blessedness of the nations, and their loyalty to Israel's king — Of  
the end of the thousand years — Chronology from the Creation to the  
end of the Melchizedek Kingdom ..... 451

CONTENTS

**DIAGRAMS AND TABLES**

1. Diagram of the Times of the Apocalypse .....	372
2. Diagram of the Frogs of Rev. 16:13 .....	391
3. Diagram of Daniel's Times .....	428
1. Chronological Table of the Age before the Law (to the Exodus) ....	291
2. Chronological Table to the Captivity .....	314
3. Chronikon Hebraikon.....	489

**The Value of Elpis Israel**

Firstly, let every candidate for immersion be requested prior to immersion (preferably), but definitely after, to read in conjunction with his daily portion of Scripture, Elpis Israel. All whom God has privileged to bring out of Gentilism into Christ, and who desire their work to withstand the fire of Christ's scrutiny, have a definite duty to perform. Babes in Christ should receive parental control until they can walk safely alone. Thus, the reading and study of Elpis Israel will build them up and establish them in the general ethics of God's Word, placing them on a more solid foundation, guarding them against false doctrine, stimulating them to withstand the darts of the evil one. — R. Roberts.

## PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION

**T**HE year 1848 has been well and truly styled the “Annus Mirabilis,” or Wonderful Year. So, indeed, it proved itself to Europe; for, though this division of the globe was overspread with numerous large, well-appointed, and highly-disciplined armies, maintained to uphold what remained of the work of the Congress of Vienna in 1815, and to prevent the rising of the people against their destroyers, yet did the wild and ill-armed Democracy of Europe break their bonds asunder as a rotten thread, and shake its kingdoms to their foundations. The mercenaries joined the people by thousands; and princes, priests, and kings trembled in their presence, or fled before them in the nakedness of detected felons. The events of this celebrated year are a memento to the world, that confusion is the lot of those who put their trust in princes, and place their confidence in an arm of flesh. Its wisdom is folly, and its power weakness before God, who withers up all its glory if He but breathe upon it (Isa. 11:4). The combined power of the governments is insufficient for the preservation of “order” for a single day. It is true they grasp the sword and command the thunderbolts of war, but their use of them is controlled by the will of God. He has decreed the persistence of “*the powers that be*,” and of the “*order*” which they represent for 1,260 years, so that they cannot be abolished either by the suicidal stupidity and folly of the “collective wisdoms” of the governments, or by the socialist excesses of the million. Man wills, and Jehovah wills; and the antagonism of these two wills it is which shapes the course of things to their divinely appointed end. The will of man universal is the result of conflicts between the individuals of his race. Were human factions left to work out their own ends uncontrolled by the divine will, the world would be filled with violence by their wickedness, and the righteous would perish from the earth. This came to pass before the Flood, and would happen again if mankind were abandoned of God; for human nature is the same in all ages of the world. That things, then, are not now as in the days of Noah, is proof positive that God is at work among the nations. If He were not, 1848 would have seen the end of the ruling-craft. Nothing prolonged the ascendancy of superstition and tyranny, as at present constituted, but the restraint imposed by Him. His purpose is not to substitute the anarchy of wild beasts for the prevailing “order,” however odious and outrageous of human rights; but, “in the fulness of the times appointed,” (Eph. 1:10) to subject the Democracy and its oppressors to a New Order of things, in which righteousness shall reign. The year 1849 equally illustrates the working of His controlling power; for if Russia and Austria had been unrestrained, their triumph over the Democracy would have been exterminating. But they cannot do all their will; for *reaction* as well as *action* proceeds from God. They are the alternations of His will for the promotion of “*that that is determined*,” (Dan. 11:36), which will be found to be far more wonderful in its future development than the wonders of these years that are passed away.

Great excitement was produced in the United States by the news of what was going on in Europe. Many who had for years before been predicting “the end of all things,” were now persuaded it had come at last. Others came

## PREFACE

to a different conclusion, and rejoiced in the supposition that the kingdoms of the world were about to become republics, after the model of the United States. Both these imaginations, however, serve to show how little the “sure word of prophecy” was understood or heeded by the people. The author endeavoured, as far as he could obtain the ear of the public, to disabuse it of these vain conceits. He opposed to them “the testimony of God,” which testifies the continuance of “the times of the Gentiles” until Nebuchadnezzar’s Image be broken to pieces upon the Mountains of Israel; and the perpetuity of the kingdoms until after this event, when Christ shall encounter their kings in battle (Rev. 17:14; 19:19, 21), and annex their realms to his kingdom by conquest; for by his kingdom, and not by popular violence, will he break in pieces and consume them all (Dan. 2:44). But the author was as one that spoke parables in the ears of the deaf. Time, however, has verified his interpretation in part. Though terribly shaken, the kingdoms still exist, and republics are at a discount; and the “Order,” in which God’s enemies rejoice, has been provisionally re-established.

The author was one of those in America whose heart was rejoiced at the news of 1848. His joy, however, sprung from a different source to that of other Europeans there. Though not behind them in the deepest abhorrence of popes, cardinals, priests, and Jesuits, and of all forms of tyranny and superstition, yet would he not lift a finger to suppress them by physical force — and to moral suasion they are as irresponsive as Satan. Nevertheless, when the potsherds of the earth strive together, he rejoices to see the Sin-power tormented (Rev. 14:9-12; 18:20) by the Democracy it has oppressed. He wishes the people success in inflicting all the punishment they are able upon the enemies of God and of His saints. They have shed the blood of His prophets (Rev. 16:6); therefore, they are worthy of all the terror inflicted upon them. But his satisfaction at the news was also on account of the proof it afforded him that he had found the prophetic key, and had opened the “sure word” aright. He had for several years previous to 1848 been calling the attention of the people to the signs of the times which indicated the approach of the kingdom of heaven. He had pointed to the wasting of the Ottoman power; to the re-appearance of the King of the South, and to his pushing at the Little Horn of the Goat in 1839, etc.; as sure and certain evidence that the “Time of the End” had actually dawned, and that the great political earthquake of the last vial would soon shake the kingdoms, preparatory to the manifestation of the kingdom of God. He particularly enforced upon them, in connection with the earthquake, the evidence to be derived from the sign of the Unclean Spirits like Frogs (Rev. 16:13-14), the only correct interpretation of which, he believes, he has presented to the world in this volume, on page 391. For the proof of his accuracy he appeals to what has since occurred, and is now transpiring in Europe; the validity of which every one may know who chooses to open his eyes and see — for no proof can be stronger than a demonstration by facts, which are stubborn things, and will not testify amiss.

The events of 1848 caused many in the United States to revisit their native lands. Among these was the author of this volume. Believing he

## PREFACE

could irradiate the light of the prophetic word upon the political tragedies of the time, and by so doing, be of use to those who desire to know the truth, he determined to intermit his labours in America, where he had been operating for about sixteen years in the same vocation, and to see if “a door of utterance” might not be opened in England for the same purpose. He was the more induced to take this step by a desire to be nearer the scene of action, that he might avail himself of the more frequent and copious details furnished by the British than the American press, to the end that he might as speedily as possible obtain a comprehensive view of the crisis; which is the most important that has yet happened to the world, because it is pregnant of consequences for good and evil, which will leave their mark upon society for a thousand years. Having made his arrangements accordingly, he arrived in London, June 28th, 1848; and in July following he received an invitation to visit Nottingham, and to deliver a course of lectures upon the times, in connection with the prophetic word. The interest created during his short stay there was great and encouraging, and became the occasion of invitations to visit other towns and cities also. During this tour he visited Derby, Belper, Lincoln, Edinburgh, Glasgow, and Paisley, and addressed thousands of the people, who heard him gladly. Those who opened the way for him were neither the rich nor the noble, but intelligent men of industrious and steady habits, who desired to know and disseminate the truth according to their means (Acts 3:6). As the author’s labours were gratuitous, they were the better able to afford him facilities; and he would add here the testimony of his experience, that not only is the gospel, when preached, “preached to the poor,” and received by them, but it is the poor also who devote themselves to its proclamation, and who do most for its support. If it had not been for the poor and humble during the last 1849 years, the gospel would have perished from the earth; for the rich have not been the persons to leave the comforts of their homes, and to go forth, without fee or reward, to enlighten their fellowmen, for the truth’s sake. It is a gratification to the author to be able to say, that he has left his home, 4,000 miles in the south-west; that he has travelled twice through Britain; delivered 170 addresses to the people; sat up early and late conversing with them on the things of the kingdom, and written this work, that he may leave a testimony behind him, and as yet has received no more than four shillings over his travelling expenses. He mentions this, that the reader may be able to acquit him of being a trader in religion; and that what he says in this book concerning “spiritual merchants” may not lose its point, under the supposition that he also is one of the wealthy and thriving firm. Rich men have not yet learned to “make themselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that when they fail, they may receive them into everlasting habitations” (Lk. 16:9; 1Tim. 6:17-19). All the opposition the author has had to contend against since his arrival in Britain has proceeded from them: but he is gratified in being able to state, that they have failed to obstruct him, and that their waywardness has recoiled on their own pates.

The interest created in the thousands who listened to the author’s discourses has originated the work now offered to the world. A request was

## PREFACE

publicly made to him in Edinburgh and Glasgow, that what had been spoken should be printed; and that, as it was not to be expected that he should publish at a mere venture, committees would be formed to promote a subscription. Although the author had concluded to return to America in October or November, he could not find it in his heart to leave his work unfinished, seeing that such a volume was now desired. Trusting, therefore, to the good faith of those who had become interested in the truth, he acceded to their request, and on his return to London entered upon the labour, which has proved sufficiently laborious by the close application required to do much in a limited time. Having at length finished the manuscript, the author made a second tour in June, 1849. In addition to the former places, he visited Birmingham, Newark, Dundee, Aberdeen, and Liverpool. The result of his labours was a list of upwards of a thousand subscribers, which encouraged him to go to press on his return to London in September. But, on revising the manuscript, he found some things omitted, others touched too lightly, and other parts too diffuse; so that, upon the whole, he condemned it as unsuitable, and imposed upon himself the task of writing it over again — which, after four months, he has accomplished, and now offers it to the public for its “edification, exhortation, and comfort.”

The nature of the work is indicated on the title-page. It is a work showing what the Bible teaches as a whole, and not the elaboration of a new or fantastical theological theory, or the new vamping of an old one. It demonstrates the great subject of the Scriptures, namely: “the Kingdom of God and of His anointed,” without which they would be as a nut whose kernel had perished. It is a book for all classes, lay and clerical, without respect of persons, for all are concluded under sin, being all ignorant of “this gospel of the kingdom.” Judging from the lucubrations of public writers of the ministerial class, the nature of the times demands something out of the ordinary periodical and public routine to awake “the churches” to spiritual life, lest they sleep the sleep of death. They are truly in a Laodicean state (Rev. 3:17), and already spued out of the mouth of the Lord. They say they are “rich and increased in goods, and have need of nothing;” but some of their doctors have discernment enough to see, that they are “wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.” But, alas for them, they know not how to remedy the evil! They do not perceive that the fault is in their systems, which have made them what they are, and which they are pledged to support on pain of “suffering the loss of all things.” The great desideratum of the crisis is *the Gospel of the Kingdom*. The State-clergy and the Dissenting-ministry are ignorant of the Gospel; and “like priest like people.” “The churches” are full of darkness, for the Gospel doth not shine into them, being neither believed nor preached among them. Here then, is a book peculiarly adapted to the times. It will show the people what the gospel is — what is the obedience it requires — and enable them to discern the times; that the Lord may not come upon them at unawares, and take them unprepared. It is a book, not for these times only, but for all the years preceding “the time of the end,” and thence to the epoch of the restoration

## PREFACE

of the kingdom and throne of David. It is named *ELPIS ISRAEL*, or *Israel's Hope*; for the kingdom of which it treats is that which is longed for by all intelligent Israelites, and for which, said Paul, "I am bound with this chain." *Elpis Israel's* subject-matter is national, not sectarian. It treats of a nation, and of its civil and ecclesiastical institutions in a past and *future age*. It is designed to enlighten both Jews and Gentiles in *Israel's Hope*, that by conforming to the proclamation of their king, they may be prepared for the administration of its affairs in concert with him, when all nations shall be as politically subject to his dominion, as Hindostan and Britain are to Queen Victoria's. It is designed to show men how they may attain to eternal life in this theocracy, and obtain a crown which shall never fade away. To accomplish this, the reader must, in justice to himself and the truth, study it with the Bible at his right hand, for he will find but few pages in which frequent reference is not made to its authority, and without which nothing can or ought to be determined.

As to the composition of the work, the public need not expect to be captivated by what is termed "fine writing." The author's time has been too precious for the fabrication of tinsel. His anxiety has been, not to throw the critics into ecstasies, but to supply the inquirer after truth with testimony and reason for faith. He has endeavoured to make *Elpis Israel* rich in matter, however poor in dress. Literary flowers in classic fields need not be sought for here; for however disposed he might be to "show off," the author has found no scope in his subject for flights of the imagination. His business has been to make manifest what actually exists, and is declared shall be, and not to indulge in fiction. Such solemn trifling he leaves to pulpit orators and the divine doctors of the schools.

A copy of this work has been ordered for presentation to the Autocrat of all the Russias. He will find in it much concerning his dominions. The high priest of the Jews showed Alexander the Great the prophecy in Daniel concerning himself; and although it spoke of his power being broken, the knowledge of it did not deter him from endeavouring to found a universal dominion. So it will be with the Autocrat. He will, doubtless receive all that speaks of the extension of his empire over Europe and Turkey, because his ambition will be flattered by it; but being impressed with the idea of his being God's Vicegerent upon earth, he will probably disregard what relates to the breaking of his power on the Mountains of Israel by the Lord from heaven; arguing as a natural man, that it is not likely God will destroy his Grand Vizier among the nations. But whatever the Autocrat may think of the destiny marked out for him, the reader's attention is particularly invited to what is said respecting it in this volume. The future movements of Russia are notable signs of the times, because they are predicted in the Scriptures of truth. The Russian Autocracy, in its plenitude, and on the verge of its dissolution, is the Image of Nebuchadnezzar standing upon the Mountains of Israel, ready to be smitten by the Stone. When Russia makes its grand move for the building-up of its Image-empire, then let the reader know that the end of all things, as at present constituted, is at hand. The long-expected, but stealthy advent of the King of Israel, will be on the eve of becoming a

fact; and salvation will be to those who not only looked for it, but have trimmed their lamps by believing the gospel of the kingdom unto the obedience of faith, and the perfection thereof in “fruits meet for repentance” (Jas. 2:22; Heb. 9:28).

As to the reviewers, the author presents his compliments to them, and respectfully invites them to examine this work impartially. While he has no wish to propitiate them, it would afford him great pleasure to turn them to what he believes to be “the truth as it is in Jesus,” as opposed to the dogmas of their creeds. It is not to be expected that they can approve the work, seeing that, if the things exhibited be received, Sectarianism is dethroned, at least in the hearts of those who receive the principles inculcated. By Sectarianism the author means *everything professedly Christian, not according to “the law and the testimony”* (Isa. 8:20). He therefore uses the word as representative of all state-religions, as well as of the forms opposed to them. Being the echo of no living sect, but the advocate only of *what is written in the oracles of God*, of the faith and practice of that “sect” which in Paul’s time “was everywhere spoken against” (Acts 28:22), he has shown no favour to the Heresies (*αἵρεσεις*) which destroy it, and therefore he expects none. The perils to which he is exposed, are only to be despised by those whose houses are founded upon the rock. The author is free to admit his weakness and inferiority in every respect that can be imagined. In one thing, however, he feels strong, and armed at all points for a conflict with the giants — *he knows what is written in “the law and the testimony,” and he understands the meaning of it*. If they undertake to review this work, they must put it through the evolutions of the Spirit; and if they enter into combat with it, he would advise them to throw away their wooden swords, and encounter it with “the two-edged sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God;” for no other weapon can do more than raise the author’s mirth. But, perhaps, prudence, which is sometimes the better part of valour, may dictate the expediency of saying nothing about it. This might be very good policy if *Elpis Israel* were born from the press only to gasp and die. But editors must remember, that before a single copy reaches them, it will be in the hands of upwards of a thousand people. This is a fact not to be despised. Such a number of intelligent persons is calculated to make a troublesome impression upon the public mind; and if the press do not check it, there is no telling whereunto the evil may grow! Let “the Ministry” be up and doing. It is not the “infidel” their influence hath to fear; but the Word of the Living God understood by the people. The author has some of them among his subscribers. He trusts that for their own sakes they will read this work with candour, impartiality, and tranquillity of mind. As individuals, he has no controversy with them. His opposition is to their systems, which he trusts they will abandon for the gospel of the kingdom. If *Elpis Israel* convince them of error, then, like the apostle, may they esteem their worldly honours and profits as mere dross for the excellency of the truth. Let them leave the fat things of the apostasy to those who “mind earthly things;” and let them put on the whole armour of God, and go forth among the people with the two-edged sword of the Spirit, and do battle for the truth.

## PREFACE

In conclusion, then, the author respectfully hands over to the subscribers this work, as an ample fulfilment of his part of the covenant between them. They can now form their own judgment of its merits or defects, according to the evidence a candid perusal may afford. And may God Almighty bless their honest endeavours to know and understand His truth, which is intrinsically invincible, and needs only to come in contact with "good and honest hearts," to become triumphantly defiant of all the wiles and "power of the enemy." May the spirit of the truth enter into them, and lead them into its liberty and fraternity; that at the coming of the Son of Man in celestial majesty and power, they may share with him in his joy, and inherit the kingdom of God with eternal glory.

*3, Brudenell Place, New North Road, London,  
January 1st, 1850.*

## PREFACE TO SECOND EDITION

It is customary to introduce a new edition of a work by an additional preface. This is very well if the publisher have anything to say that is likely to interest the reader; otherwise it only increases the bulk, cost, and weight of the work unnecessarily. I have endeavoured to persuade myself that there was no need to add, in the way of preface, to what I have said already in the London edition; but I find I cannot evade the necessity of inserting a few pages more, which the circumstances of the case have rendered indispensable.

In the preface to the first edition, I stated that "a copy of this work had been ordered for presentation to the Autocrat of all the Russias." This was the fact. It was ordered by a friend in Dundee, in Scotland, whence a great trade is carried on with the Emperor's dominions. Now, what I have to add, is rendered necessary, that the reader may not be misled. He will have probably concluded that the Autocrat is in possession of *Elpis Israel*, and acquainted with its contents. This, however, is not the case, as far as I am at present informed. My friend in Dundee did his best to get the work transmitted. He applied to several captains of vessels trading to St. Petersburg, but they all declined to take it, lest it might bring them into trouble there.

Apprehensive that he might have difficulty, and desiring to make its transmission sure, I determined, while in London, to send it through Baron Brunnow, the Russian ambassador at the court of St. James. I accordingly put it up in parcel form, with a letter to his excellency, and another to the emperor himself, and sent it by a special messenger. He found some difficulty, however, in procuring admission for it: it being a rule at Ashburnham House, to receive nothing from private persons, unless previously ordered. After some little dispute, and my messenger refusing to take it back, it was received, and handed in to the ambassador. This was on February 11th, 1850. He retained the book sixteen days, and on the 27th,

returned it through the "Parcels' Delivery Company," with the following note:

"Le Baron de Brunnow présente ses complimens à Monsieur John Thomas et en lui restituant ci-près un ouvrage imprimé, et la lettre jointe à son billet du 11 Février dernier, se fait un devoir de le prévenir en meme tems que les règles du service n'autorisent point les Ambassades de Russie de transmettre à St. Petersbourg des envois à l'adresse de S. M. l'Empereur.

"Le Baron Brunnow regrette de devoir ajouter qu'il lui serait impossible de solliciter de son gouvernement une exception à la règle générale en faveur du présent envoi."

ASHBURNHAM HOUSE,  
Le 27 Février.

For those who do not know French, I submit the following version: —  
"Baron Brunnow presents his compliments to Mr. John Thomas, and in returning to him so soon a printed work, and the letter which accompanied his note of the 11th of February last, feels it his duty to inform him, at the same time, that the rules of the service do not at all allow the ambassadors of Russia to transmit to St. Petersburg things sent to the address of His Majesty the Emperor.

"Baron Brunnow regrets the necessity of adding, that it would be impossible for him to solicit of his government an exception to the general rule in favour of *Elpis Israel*."

Before this, I had sent a copy of the work, with a letter, to Lord Palmerston, the English Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. On receiving his reply, which will be found on another page, I printed them both, and sent a copy to the Baron, with the following note:

"Mons. le docteur Thomas présente ses complimens à Mons. le Baron de Brunnow, et lui remet une lettre qu'il a publiée et adressée au vicomte Palmerston, Secrétaire d'Etat pour les affaires étrangères. Mons. T. envoie la dite lettre à Mons. le Baron dans l'objet de l'informer que le Vicomte possède déjà, et apprécie l'information y contenue, en regrettant en meme tems que les règles du service ambassadorial de Russie ne permettront pas à Mons. le Baron de le transmettre à Son Majesté l'Empereur. Mons. T. se permet aussi de faire observer à Mons. le Baron si ce ne soit pas une mauvaise politique de fermer les yeux sur cela que les ennemis de l'Empire de Russie se trouvent de connaître. Les destinées des nations sont déterminées par les idées, qui sont aussi la cause de la chute des gouvernements: il faut donc que nous n'ignorons pas ce qui peut donner probablement l'avantage à nos adversaires.

"Mons. T. prie Mons. le Baron de vouloir bien agréer ses remerciemens pour la politesse dont son billet du 27 Février porte l'expression."

When rendered into English, the above reads as follows:

"Dr. Thomas presents his compliments to Baron Brunnow, and sends him a letter he has published, and addressed to Viscount Palmerston, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. Mr. T. sends the said letter to the Baron for the purpose of informing him that the Viscount already possesses

## PREFACE

and appreciates the information contained (in *Elpis Israel*), at the same time regretting that the rules of the ambassadorial service of Russia will not allow the Baron to transmit it to His Majesty the Emperor. Mr T. would also submit to the Baron, if it be not bad policy to close the eyes upon what the enemies of the Russian Empire are themselves acquainted with. Ideas determine the destinies of nations, and cause the fall of governments: it is necessary, then, that we do not remain ignorant of what may probably give the advantage to our opponents.

"Mr. T. begs the Baron to accept his thanks for the politeness evinced by his note of the 27th February."

3, Brudenell Place, New North Road,  
London, March 7, 1850.

This concluded my correspondence with the ambassador. He retained the "*billet*," but returned the "*letter*" addressed to the Emperor. The "rules of the service" are an effectual expedient to exclude from the Autocrat's mind all inconvenient ideas. I have no doubt, however, but that it is just as it ought to be. The Angel-Princes who watch over and superintend the affairs of the nations, may have arranged that it should be so; the darkness of the Russian Majesty being necessary for its precipitation upon the hopeless destiny that awaits it.

It would, perhaps, be deemed tantalizing to have mentioned my correspondence with these high personages, and to leave the reader ignorant of its purport. I will therefore terminate his suspense, and at the same time gratify his curiosity, by laying the contents of the epistles before them. First, then, I shall lay before him the letter to the Russian Ambassador which elicited his note to me of February 27th:

3, BRUDENELL PLACE, NEW NORTH ROAD,  
LONDON, February, 11th, 1850.

SIR, — I have thought it no more than right and proper to forward to you for transmission to the Emperor Nicholas, a copy of a work recently published and extensively circulated, in which the future destiny of Russia, as revealed by Divine Providence in the Bible, is largely treated of.

In a conversation between the Emperor and certain Polish bishops, translated into the *Times*, he is reported to have said, that "*the true faith exists in Russia alone*," and that he has "*firm faith*." We also understand in this country that he claims to be *God's Vicar* — the imperial representative of the Almighty among the nations. This is the grand climax of the more humble pretensions enunciated by the renowned Peter, who found Russia a small rivulet and left it an immense river, that his successors might magnify it into "an ocean:" to whom, as he would have the world believe, "the All-Powerful had revealed His wishes and intentions." Admitting that the Greek faith is *as true*, and certainly more ancient than the Roman, which glories in another vicar than the Emperor, but denying *in toto* the apostolicity and verity of either, I congratulate your Excellency in being a representative of

## PREFACE

a ruler, who, at least, professes faith in God, and a firm conviction that “the Most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever He will.”

The Emperor Nicholas seems to have inherited the convictions of Peter the Great. The latter “looked upon Russia as *called upon to establish her rule over all Europe*; and its invasion of the West and the East as *a decree of Divine Providence*,” while the former in his note to Count Karl Vasilievitch, speaks of “the policy of Russia having *a salutary end assigned to it by Divine Providence*,” which is manifested in the “preservation of Europe from the incalculable calamities with which it is threatened;” that is, in plain English, as we say, the salutary end of Russian policy is for the Emperor to become the Constantine of the world, seeing that it is no longer able to keep the peace without him.

To minds unacquainted with “the things noted in the Scriptures of truth,” these pretensions of the Russian Majesty appear preposterous. They look at your Emperor as an ambitious and cruel tyrant, who, like another Attila, delights in war and massacre for its own sake. But it is evident from his proclamations that his aggressions are motived by considerations which they have not “faith” enough to comprehend. He believes his country is called of God to save Europe from anarchy, which can only be accomplished by the iron hand of an Autocrat, giving law and “faith” to its peoples, whose disorders arise from impiety and irreligion. If the earth is to be inhabited, it is unquestionable that order must be maintained. Superstition having first brutalized the nations, and a little knowledge afterwards puffed them up, they respond only to two extremes, equally hateful to all rightly-constituted minds — *licentiousness* and *despotism*. The happy medium is *Liberty based upon righteousness*. But at present, this is impossible; for neither popes, emperors, kings, priests, nor people have knowledge, virtue or wisdom enough to compass the greatest good for society by which God shall be glorified and the nations blessed.

DESPOTISM, then, is the desideratum for Europe at present; and there is but one species of it extant, vigorous and iron-sceptred enough to respond to the necessities of the case, and that is *the Russian*. Your Emperor need not fear to strike the blow for universal dominion. The world is before him and in its decrepitude, as it were, inviting him to become its lord from the rising to the setting sun.

He has, doubtless, a speculative faith in the Bible, though he may not be aware of the great things recorded therein concerning the mission of his “sacred Russia.” The book which I now send him through your Excellency as a duplicate copy, will show *what Divine Providence has decreed concerning it*. He, or a successor, will wield a sceptre in Constantinople, for magnitude of power and extent of dominion, such as the world has never yet witnessed since Nimrod hunted men as beasts before the Lord. Russia’s mission is to reduce all the nations of the Old World, save Britain and her dependencies, into one IMPERIAL DOMINION, represented in the book of Daniel by the image of Nebuchadnezzar. Licentiousness will again break loose, and in the *melée* the Austro-Papal empire will succumb; the contest

PREFACE

will end in the discomfiture of the Continent, and Russia, like a mighty inundation, will overflow the nations and dash her waves upon their shores, from the Danish Belts to the Dardanelles. Britain will rage, and shake the world with her thunder; but, as in the days of Napoleon, her alliance will be fatal to them that trust her, and only precipitate their fall.

Let the Autocrat, however, beware how he lay his hand on Syria. Europe and Turkey will be his; Persia, Ethiopia, Libya, and at length, Egypt — but IN PALESTINE THE POWER OF RUSSIA WILL BE BROKEN. But beyond this, I will say no more. I have said enough to interest both your excellency and the Emperor, in any book wherein these astounding events are treated of. If your imperial lord be too cautious, too hesitating, too fearful of the strife, to “stretch out his hand upon the countries,” “the Most High, who ruleth in the kingdom of men” *will soon remove him*,\* and exalt a more fitting instrument to execute His will.

That Russia’s mission may be soon accomplished, and the constituents of her fully developed dominion be “broken to pieces together,” and like thistle-down, or “the chaff of the summer threshing-floors,” be carried away by a divine tempest, and found no more for ever, is the earnest and daily prayer to heaven, of him who subscribes himself, with all due consideration and respect,

Your Excellency’s well-wisher,

JOHN THOMAS,  
*Author of “Elpis Israel.”*

The letter which accompanied the above, addressed to the Autocrat, and returned with the book, is as follows:

3, BRUDENELL PLACE, NEW NORTH ROAD,  
LONDON, ENGLAND, February 11, 1850.

*Nicholas, Emperor and Prince of Ros, Mos, and Tobl.*

May it please your Majesty, — The Most High God hath given you a kingdom and majesty, glory and honour; and for the majesty He hath given you, all the peoples, nations, and languages of the Continent tremble with fear, being apprehensive of the terror coming upon them by your hand. In your own kingdom you are absolute: for whom you will you punish, and whom you will you pardon — whom you will you promote, and whom you will you put down. This is a tremendous power to be at the disposal of a mortal man; but happy is it for mankind, *the will* of kings, popes, and emperors *is not free*: but subordinated, restrained, controlled of God — as it is written in the Holy Oracles, “the powers that be are *placed under God*” — *υπο του Θεου τεταγμεναι εισι*.

I address you, Czar, by that title which the God of Heaven hath

---

\* In four or five years after Nicholas was suddenly removed, not being the right man for future developments. — *Note to Third Edition.*

## PREFACE

bestowed upon you in the writings of His holy prophets, who, in their day, made known His secrets before autocrats and kings of great renown. The title is equivalent to "Autocrat of all the Russias," by which you are ordinarily designated. But, Czar, I write to you respectfully to invite your attention to what Israel's prophets have recorded concerning "the mission" of your "sacred Russia;" and to request your acceptance of a work, styled *Elpis Israel*, by which your understanding of their testimony may be facilitated. The book will explain to you the applicability of the above title to your dynasty. It will also unfold to you the mighty power and astounding magnitude of the dominion which the Most High God has predestined for your rising country; and demonstrate to you that your sceptre *in the hand of the last of your successors* will be shivered to pieces as a just retribution for his unparalleled presumption and evil deeds.

A work laying before you such high and important matters as these, cannot fail to interest you, O Czar, of all men upon the earth. The Most High God speaks to you in the Bible, saying, "Thou art he of whom I have spoken in old time by My servants, the prophets of Israel;" and He commands you, saying also, "Be thou prepared, and prepare for thyself, thou and all thy company that are assembled unto thee, and be thou a guard unto them." He has enumerated the peoples and nations which are to constitute your "company" *when the dominion of Russia shall have attained its full extent*. No previous empire will have equalled it; for, in addition to the territory you now possess, it will comprehend that of the old Roman empire, with Persia, and the outlying countries of Germany, Bohemia, etc. Europe and Turkey will fall before your hosts, as the former fell before Napoleon. ENGLAND WILL BE AGAINST YOU. You will not be able to cope with her upon the sea. She will make you respect her power there; for God has given her the ocean, but the land to you. Her alliance will be fatal to all the Continentals who look to her for help. She cannot conquer Destiny. Her politicians affect to despise your power, and from the supposed poverty of your treasury, predict your inability to compass your ambition! They forget that the barbarians who overturned the Roman Empire made the conquered pay the expenses of the war; so, in your case, a single campaign may put you in possession of Constantinople and its European dependencies, and place you in a position to command riches which, under Turkish rule, are undeveloped, and unavailable.

Fear not, then, O Czar, to unloose your hosts against the West. Europe is weak, and her debility is your strength. Her licentious masses hate their incapable and stolid rulers. There is no union, no sympathy between them. The West and South are at the end of their career, and doomed of God to a social disruption and overthrow. Russia is His sword to punish the Latins for their crimes against His people and His holy name, which has been blasphemed by their popes, emperors, and populations, as were the Saracens and the Turks His sword to recompense the Greeks for their enormities. Arise, then, O Czar, draw thy sword upon Turk and Papist, and throw the scabbard to the winds. Everything favours the enterprise: Turkey is decrepit; Austria death-stricken; Naples, Sardinia, Portugal and Spain,

## PREFACE

names signifying political nihility; France unstable and distracted; Germany disunited, and, therefore, weak; Denmark already in your interest; and, with a little management, England unable to get at you except with her gold. With your right hand upon the Danish Belts, and your left upon the Dardanelles, you can shut her out from the Baltic and Euxine, and do according to your will, subject only to the control of the Most High, against whose foes you are called to fight. *The coming conflict between France and Austria, in the case of Italy and the Pope, will still further facilitate your conquests.* The revealed destinies of these powers, and of the Papacy, so worthily detested by all the friends of truth, righteousness, and humanity, are interpreted in *Elpis Israel*, so that I need not expatiate upon them here. Their mutually exhausting wars, extinctive of the Austrian Empire, will leave France an easy prey to Russia. Divide and conquer, for French, Austrians, and Italians, like Turks, Greeks, and Russians, are fit only for subjection to him who is able to rule them with a rod of iron.

But, after Russia has done her work upon the licentious and degenerate nations of the West, the Most High God will bring her also to judgment for her crimes, as He has Assyria, Persia, Macedon, and Rome in former days. Her dominion will pass away as “the baseless fabric of a vision, and leave not a wreck behind.” Where, O Czar, is now the meteor-like empire of “Napoleon le Grand?” Vanished like a vision of the night, or the morning dew! And such is the consummation of the mission of your “sacred Russia,” whose Image-Empire will be smitten on its feet by the God of Heaven, when her Autocrat and his hosts, “like a cloud to cover the land,” shall fall by pestilence and the sword, “upon the mountains of Israel.” This is the “salutary end” of your power “decreed by Divine Providence,” in the Holy Scriptures. *The last of the Autocrats* therein designated by the title “Gogue of the land of Magogue, prince of Rosc, and Tobl,” will be bruised, beaten down, and trodden under foot by the Messiah of Israel, when he descends in power and great glory to “break in pieces the oppressor,” and to establish truth and justice, good and righteous government in the earth.

That the fate of Sennacherib, or Belshazzar, may not be that of your majesty’s person; but that, subduing Turkey and Europe, you may temper severity with mercy, being a “terror to evil doers,” and a praise to them that do well; and that, protecting the helpless, showing kindness to the poor, and ever remembering that the Most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and calls their kings and potentates to a fearful account for their misrule — you may end your days peacefully in the midst of your family and dependents — is the sincere hope of one who subscribes himself,

With all due consideration and respect,

Your Majesty’s well-wisher,

JOHN THOMAS,

*Author of “Elpis Israel.”*

*Addendum.* — I would add, by way of explanation, that two copies of the work have been forwarded to your Majesty — one with this letter through Baron de Brunnow, the other by transmission to a resident in St. Petersburg. This plan has been adopted in order to secure the safe arrival

## PREFACE

of one at least, which, I doubt not, your Majesty's courtesy will induce you to acknowledge.

I will add no more, but commend the work to the reader's attentive perusal. Let him study it carefully, not forgetting to compare its exposition with the things noted in the Scriptures of truth. Let him read it through before he pronounces sentence upon its contents; for the knowledge of the end is necessary to a right comprehension of the beginning. Farewell, then, and may success attend the reader's efforts to know, understand, and to do the truth.

RICHMOND, VA., *June*, 1851.

## PREFACE TO THIRD EDITION

NEARLY ten years have elapsed since this work was originally published in London, England. A year after, an edition was published in New York, the two editions collectively consisting of two thousand three hundred copies. These have been all disposed of, so that for the past three years the author has been unable to supply a considerable additional demand for the work. He has been urged by many who have read the book to publish a new edition; and as proof that this was not a mere compliment, one of them (Mr. Alex. Packie, of Baltimore, Md), donates to the author eighty dollars towards the publication; and another, whose liberality towards what he believes is the truth, is well known (Mr. W. P. Lemmon, of the same city), writes: "Apart from all other considerations than the real merit of the book, you have nothing to fear as to its success. I would recommend you to give *at once* a public announcement of your intention to issue a new edition, and invite orders; you may find a larger edition wanted than you anticipate." Encouraged, therefore, by many similar assurances from others, I have published this *third edition of Elpis Israel*.

When the work was written, the times were of a highly exciting and stirring character. Nor have they materially changed to the present hour. During the past ten years a succession of events has demonstrated, that a fixed and predetermined purpose is in process of development, unknown, indeed, to "the Powers that be," but known of God, revealed in His word, and guided by His hand. That purpose is, *the gathering together of the hosts of the nations against Jerusalem to war; that the Eternal Spirit, by Jesus, the King of kings, may smite them upon the mountains of Israel; and in concert with resurrected and living saints, at the head of the armies of Israel, re-establish the throne and kingdom of David, and subjugate all other kingdoms to this New Power in the earth*. If the reader desire to assure himself of the verity of this purpose, he may consult the testimonies referred to below,\* which the past history of Israel, of Jesus and the Saints, and of the world at large, all prove has never yet been fulfilled; so that he has no

---

\* Isa. 14:24-27; 27:1-6; Joel 3:1-2, 9-17; Mic. 5:1-6; Zec. 12:1-9; 14:1-11; Dan. 11:40-45; 12:1-2; Rev. 19:11-16; 17:14; 11:15-17; 5:9-10; 2:26-27; Acts 15:16; Amos 9:11-15; Isa. 9:6-7; Lk. 1:31-33 — and so forth.

alternative but to believe the purpose, or reject the truth of the Bible, and write himself an infidel. There is no neutral ground. Every man in "Christendom," falsely so-called, is on the side of the purpose or against it. Jesus and his apostles preached that "*Salvation is of the Jews*" — a salvation dependent upon the development of the purpose defined. Hence, "when ye see certain things coming to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh" — a saying which intimates that the approach of redemption, whatever it may consist in, may be known by a current fulfilment of predicted things, shortly preceding its manifestation.

It is this relation between the gospel salvation and political events that makes the current time so highly interesting; for there is no salvation for Jew or Gentile, until Jerusalem is in actual possession of the "*Gog of the land of Magog, prince of Rosh, Rosc and Tobl,*" and he be broken there by THE KING OF THE JEWS, returned from the "far country" where he now is. This is an indispensable necessity, and one that cannot obtain so long as Europe exists under its present constitution. What is needed there, is *one ruling power, whose ascendancy is above all rivalry; and whose policy will be approved and accepted by all its Continental contemporaries, as absolute.* To develop this there must be a tempest, in which the countries shall be overflowed by a submerging inundation — (Dan. 11:40-41); or, as Prince Metternich remarked, saying, "*after me the Deluge.*" The statesmen of the Old World see that something terrible is looming in the near future; but they confess that they cannot see the end of it. It is true, they cannot; though that end has been proclaimed through the Exile of Patmos, wherever the New Testament is read. This apostle informs us, that "the Ten Horns receive power as kings with the Beast (the Eighth Head of the Beast) one hour. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the Beast," and so forth. "For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil His will, and to agree, and give their kingdom to the Beast until the word of God be fulfilled" — Rev. 17:12-13, 17. Now this combination of Powers upon the Fourth Beast habitable for "*one hour,*" or thirty years, has never been evinced in all their history. The coming tempest will promote this development, which, when consummated, will produce the "One Mind," or policy, by which all the hosts of the nations may be moved as one man against Egypt and Jerusalem, to war against the Power (Britain and her allies) then in possession.

In my letter to the late chief of the Power, styled by Ezekiel, "*Prince of Rosh, Rosc, and Tobl,*" I referred him to the "*coming conflict between France and Austria, in the case of Italy and the Pope.*" I have been looking for this for the last ten years; and when asked at what time I would re-visit England, have invariably replied, When France and Austria fall foul of one another: certainly not before. This collision seems now to be imminent; and whenever it breaks out, then, as I wrote to the Czar, will be Russia's opportunity. Nicholas was a little too soon, calculating more upon the force of his single arm, than upon force seconded by an agreement of other powers. *Ezekiel's prophecy seems clearly to require the extinction of Austrian ascendancy.* If the empire be not dissipated, its supremacy must

yield to Russia, but we shall see. He and France are now antagonists; and Austria and Russia are nominally friends.

When *Elpis Israel* first appeared, France was a republic under President Napoleon, self-styled the saviour of society from impending anarchy. Since then, in despite of the Treaty of Vienna, in 1815, which excludes the Buonaparte family from all sovereign power in Europe, he seized upon sovereignty in France, and by a bloody *coup-d'état* made himself emperor. He has ruled in France with scorpions; and encouraged by success, evidently proposes to experiment after his uncle's fashion upon Italy, Austria, and the Pope. For our own part, we doubt not that the uncle's fate also awaits him. France is a toe of Nebuchadnezzar's image, and a horn of the eighth head of the Beast: hence her symbolical constitution is regal, *not imperial*. I expect, therefore, the fall of the French empire in and by the same tempest that is about to change the political map of Europe, and to demolish the Ottoman, sustained only from without.

From a review of all that is at work among the powers, we may truly say that no times are more interesting and important than these. The political situation is that of the "*Three unclean spirits, like Frogs*" which are "*working miracles*" in the political world of the old prophetic arena of the divine purpose. No ordinary events are about to come to pass; and whatever comes will be promotive of that grand revolution in human affairs by which the kingdom of the clergy shall be disrupted; and the civil power that sustains it in all countries, utterly destroyed. When ye see these things predicted in Rev. 16:12-14, as ye may, for they are characteristic of the times, look up and lift up your heads — for in verse 15 of the same chapter, the Spirit saith "Behold, I come as a thief! Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame."

Reader, in view of this warning, have you on these "*garments?*" Are you "*keeping*" them unspotted by the world; or are you "*walking naked?*" If you are not "in Christ," you are in the rags and nakedness of sin. Your sin is uncovered; and he only is "blessed whose transgression is forgiven, whose *sin is covered*; the man unto whom Jehovah imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile" (Psa. 32:1-2; Rom. 4). But you may be ignorant of the whole matter, though you may be as full of denominational pietism as a Romish devotee, or a Protestant enthusiast. Ignorance alienates from the life of God; for pious ignorance is only infidelity; and "without faith it is impossible to please God." Now *Elpis Israel* has been written to dispel the darkness of such as you; to turn you from Satan to God; that you may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among the sanctified through faith that leads unto Jesus — that you may be clothed with him, as with a pure and spotless robe, "clean and white," that you may not walk naked, and be exposed to shame.

We may remark here, that on p. 142, line 24, we are supposed to say that "the work of the law was written upon the hearts" of Gentiles who had heard nothing of it. This was not my meaning. I there endeavour to account for the moral difference between the mere savage and the peoples of the four empires; that the little light they had came from the law through their

## PREFACE

intercourse with Israel; it came “from without:” but where there was no intercourse with this peculiar people, the darkness was total; and there was no accusing or excusing, no conscience; but a blind, impulsive instinct, unsentimental as that of the beasts that perish. We agree entirely with our intelligent friend whose letter has been already quoted from at the beginning, that “Paul, in Rom. 2:15, is labouring to check the presumption of the Jews who were claiming pre-eminence in the congregation at Rome, because of their superior knowledge of the law of Moses, by showing their pretensions vain because they had not kept the law; whereas *the Gentiles in the church*, who never were under the law of Moses, showed that the work of the law was written in their hearts by the word of the truth of the gospel by faith, and therefore they kept the righteousness of the law; and by doing so they proved that they were the true circumcision, all of which is clearly and beautifully argued out to the close of the chapter.”

And now, sending ELPIS ISRAEL for a third time on his travels to proclaim the kingdom of God, and its near approach, we commend him and all he may salute, “to Him who is able to present faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy: to the only wise God our Saviour be glory, and majesty, and dominion, and power in all the Aions. Amen.”

MOTT HAVEN, WESTCHESTER, N.Y.,

May 6, 1859.

## PREFACE TO FOURTH EDITION

SEVEN years have elapsed since the issue of the third edition of this work. For a considerable time there have been no copies of it for sale, being, as the phrase is, “out of print.” A fourth edition has been called for both in Britain and America. To this call the author has reluctantly responded; not that he did not think it desirable; but because of the additional labour it would append to that already on hand in the preparation of the manuscript of the third volume of the *Exposition of the Apocalypse*, styled EUREKA. The earnest request, however, of many acquainted with ELPIS ISRAEL; and the commencement of a subscription in Britain and the States to induce compliance, at length overcame this reluctance. For the first time since correcting the proof of the first edition in 1849, he has read the work again. He knew what ought to be there; but memory after seventeen years, did not serve him with the assurance that he would so find it. It was reasonable to suppose that a longer and maturer study of “The Word” might render him dissatisfied with much originally written; and that he would have to strike out many pages that could not now be endorsed.

But in reviewing the original, the author was agreeably surprised on finding he had so few corrections to make. He has made about half a dozen in the first part; and less than that number in the second. In the third part he found it necessary to make the most. If he were to re-write the book, he might go more into detail upon some points; while other parts, perhaps, he might retrench; but upon the whole, considering that it is designed for an elementary work, he does not know that it would thereby be much

improved. The emendations made will place this revise in accord with the author's latest work; so that he considers this revised edition is the best.

The most important correction has been that emendatory of allusions to *the resurrection*. The understanding of this "*element of the beginning of the oracles of the Deity*" — στοιχεῖα της αρχης των λογικων του θεου — Heb. 5:12; 6:2 — has been enlarged in the author's mind since 1849. The question was not then the resurrection *in its detail*; but the necessity of resurrection and a judgment at all in view of the immortality of the soul and its instantaneous translation to heaven or hell at the death of the body. Such a dogma as this is a logical denial of both resurrection and judgment. It makes them both superfluous, and absolutely unnecessary. It was, therefore, met at that time by a testimony, pure and simple, for resurrection of the body, as indispensable to the incorruptibility and immortality of the dead. But the times are now changed. The Laodiceanism of the Clerical Apostasy has been fully exposed and refuted; and the resurrection and judgment are just at hand. The time had therefore overtaken us in which the author found it necessary, in *Eureka*, to expound more in detail so important a consequence of the speedy and thieflike advent of Christ. Some, who have no objection to resurrection *in general*, are very much dissatisfied with it *in its particulars*. The resurrection ordained of the Deity does not suit them; and, therefore, they loudly disapprove it! They contend,

1. That the judgment of the righteous, in which they are giving account of themselves to God, is in the present life, after which they will have no account to give.
2. That resurrection of an imperfect body is not taught directly or indirectly in the word.
3. That the righteous are not brought to judgment.
4. That the Scriptures teach positively and without reservation, that the righteous are raised incorruptible.

With such theorists it is judgment first, and resurrection afterwards! This is an inversion of the divine order, by which the whole subject is confused. The author believes that the divine order is the best; and he believes, too, that the righteous are raised incorruptible; but, also, that *the raising* is not one instantaneous event like the lightning's flash; but *an order of development*, initiated in the dust, and ultimating *after judgment* in incorruptibility and deathlessness of body.

The author has found no reason to change his view of Ezekiel's prophecy of Gog and Magog in its application to Russia and Germany. The recent development of Prussia there is doubtless the precursor of Russian ascendancy in Europe and the East. A writer upwards of fifty years ago, gleaned from Bochart's *Researches into Sacred Geography*, and the writings of Major Rennel, and others, the information identifying Ezekiel's names with modern countries of Europe and Asia. This he transferred to these pages for the reader's benefit. In his acknowledgment of this fact on page 437, he did not name the compiler; because the point which was original with him, which was the absurd application of what he had gleaned to the first Napoleon in his invasion of Russia and signal overthrow there,

## PREFACE

the author of *Elpis Israel* altogether denied. It would have been unnecessary to allude to this, but that cavillers of the meaner sort have busied themselves over the omission.

And here might be concluded the preface to this edition, which, with its predecessors, will have put this generation in possession of thirty-three hundred copies of the work. But then, seeing that the marvellous character of the times was the occasion of the existence of *ELPIS ISRAEL*, how could the author send forth this revise without inviting the attention of the reader again to the still more extraordinary times of 1866? Ever since 1821, when "*that determined*" began to be "*poured out upon the Desolator*" of the Holy Land, the Signs of the approach of "THE HOUR OF JUDGMENT" have been accumulating "in all the Habitable." The principal signs may be enumerated as, *first*, the drying up of the Euphratean, or Ottoman Power; *next*, the operation of the Frog, or French Power, in its development of the EASTERN and ROMAN QUESTIONS; and *thirdly*, the notable fact, that the first gun announcing the outbreak of the American Civil War was exactly 2,400 years from the death of Daniel in the third of Cyrus, B.C. 540 — (Dan. 8:14; 10:1; 1:21; Rev. 16:12-14). The Frog-power put down the Roman Republic; and planted itself in Rome as a guard to the Pope, and as "the Eldest Daughter of the Revolution." By its policy operating upon the Dragon-Power of Constantinople, it developed the Crimean War and its consequences; and in 1859, it stirred up the Two-Horned Beast of the Earth to make war against Sardinia, which it strengthened by its alliance, and the promise of a *united Italy from the Alps to the Adriatic, and Rome for the Capital*. This programme is fatal to THE POPEDOM: a little pontifical principality of 17, 050 square miles, with 2,600,000 inhabitants, lying between Austrian Italy and the Kingdom of Naples. The result of that war put Sardinia into possession of Lombardy, the Italian Duchies, and Naples; but leaving to Austria, Venetia and the Quadrilateral; and to the Pope, Rome and a diminished territory.

Such was the state of affairs at the outbreak of the Prusso-Italian war against Austria, in June, 1866. In the preface to the third edition, the author says, "*Ezekiel's prophecy seems clearly to require the extinction of Austrian ascendancy*;" and on page 387, speaking of "the Revolution," as the Pope terms his Mazzinian and Garibaldian foes, he says, "they are repressed for the moment; but things are progressing in such a direction as to bring the power of the Democracy to bear against Austria and Rome, *perhaps through France and Prussia*." These results have been recently signally established. Austrian ascendancy has been extinguished through the countenance and co-operation of France and Prussia accorded to the revolutionary antagonists of the Austro-Papal dominion in Italy. The late short, sharp, and decisive war, by wresting Venetia and the Quadrilateral from Austria, has insulated the Popedom from his ally; and left it in the hands of the two revolutionary powers of France and Italy. Between these a convention exists, by which it is arranged that France shall withdraw her army of occupation from Rome, two years after the removal of the Italian Government from Turin to Florence; so that in the words of the *Journal des*

*Debats* (Oct. 7), "It is certain that, on the 15th of December, 1866, the Pope will be alone in the presence of his subjects, without any foreign interposition."

Now, it is not difficult to conceive the fate of "*the god of the earth's*" dominion when left to the tender mercies of his priest-hating and revolutionary Romans. The Papal "Image of the Beast" is intensely disgusting to all in Rome, save those "hateful and unclean birds" which gorge themselves with the rotten flesh of the body politic. Even these spiritual merchants themselves perceive that the crisis of their imposture is upon them; and that no mercy is to be expected from "*the earth*," to which the humiliation of Austria has given for the time full and absolute control of the Pope and his dominion. The sentence upon this is one of the decrees of Deity. Nearly eighteen hundred years ago, it was placed on record, that the enemies of Rome "shall hate the harlot ('that Great City that reigneth over the kings of the earth'), and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire: for the Deity hath put in their hearts to fulfil His will" — Rev. 17:16, 18. The earnest of what is coming upon the Papacy is seen in the confiscation of all its possessions in Italy, by Act of Parliament, to the amount of one hundred millions of dollars. This is eating the flesh of Papal Rome, and making her desolate and naked: and when the operation is extended to the States of the Church, the Pope will have become what he was originally under the Seventh Head of the Beast, the Gothic Kings of Rome and Italy, a mere "False Prophet," subject to the civil power.

The best testimony to the extremity to which "the god of the earth" is reduced is that of his own worshippers. In reference to this, Cardinal Cullen, Archbishop of Dublin, in his address to his clergy, says, "The spirit of revolution is triumphant in those states which have heretofore supported the Pope. Austria, the last of his supporters, is now almost completely ruined, and the Emperor of the French holds the hands of his friends, while his enemies are stripping him of everything he has. The Emperor is about to leave him at the mercy of the Italians, who are distinguished by the fiercest hatred to everything Catholic."

The Catholic organ, styled *Le Monde*, says, "We cannot see indeed what is to prevent the Italian Revolution from ascending the Capitol. France abandons Rome. Austria makes advances to King Victor Emmanuel; all the Catholic Powers become more and more entangled in revolutionary embarrassment, under the pretext of escaping from the embarrassment of the Roman Question. Christian princes seem more disposed to ally themselves with the Revolution, than to rise in defence of the Holy Father of the Catholic Church. Rome, for one reason or other, is really abandoned by men."

Thus the Ecclesiastical Sin-Power, which Paul said would "exalt itself above everything called god," finds that the day of his exaltation, or sovereignty, is about to close. Though he has two hundred millions of worshippers in all the earth, they perceive that there is no human power at hand to save him from perdition. Thus, in the year of grace, 1866, he stands

confessed before the world as "THE MAN OF SIN, THE SON OF PERDITION." His children declare, that prayer to heaven, and miracle, are his only resource! All Catholics in Ireland were called upon by Cardinal Cullen and his bishops, to pray simultaneously, on September 9th, for the Pontiff in his present distressing situation. That they expect deliverance for him in answer to their prayers, and that too by divine miracle, is evident from the words of the popish Archbishop of Westminster, who says, "How the deliverance will be accomplished I cannot say, but what I say is, that the dark cloud which at this moment hangs over the Eternal City, will be swept away, and *replaced by the splendour of the Divine Presence!*"

Such is the case of "His Holiness," viewed from the standpoint of his own friends and worshippers. But, as they confess, "the ways of Providence are unknown" to them. They know not that these ways are the subject of revelation. Therein the Deity has made known, that the LION MOUTH of the European Sisterhood of States, which is the Roman Pontificate, was granted *authority to practise* — *ἐξουσία ποιῆσαι* — *forty-two months* — Rev. 13:5. This is the time, symbolically expressed, of its license to practise state-craft. The license was under providence granted to the Bishop of the Latin Church in Rome, by the Dragon Power of Constantinople, which then had imperial authority over the Seven Hilled City; for so it is written, "the Dragon gave power to the Beast," and in so doing, gave to the Leo Babylonian Mouth of the Beast "his power, and his throne (Old Rome) and great authority."

The imperial successor of Constantine in Constantinople, granted said Italian Bishop his license to practise without limitation of time or authority. He made him universal arbiter in all spiritual affairs; so that all "the saints of the Most High" within the limits of "Christendom" so called, were, by said license, "given into his hand" under the name of "HERETICS," with whom it was declared "no faith is to be kept" — Daniel 7:25; Rev. 13:7. But, though "heretics" were placed imperially at his disposal for ever, Providence did not endorse this illimitable disposition of them. They were not to be trampled under foot for ever; but only till the manifestation of what the Archbishop of Westminster terms "the splendour of the Divine Presence;" and styled by a better authority than he, namely Daniel, "THE COMING OF THE ANCIENT OF DAYS." Providence endorsed the imperial license for the Babylonian Lion-Mouth to practise iniquity and blasphemy only for the period allotted to the down-treading of the Saints. His practising and their down-treading are concurrent periods. They begin and end at the same time; so that the fall of the Popedom is the epoch of the rise of the Saints.

Now, it is this remarkable arrangement of Providence that invests the fall of the Pope's dominion with so much significance and importance. To the non-Catholic world it is a satisfaction to behold the ruin of the old enemy, who, in the day of his power, used to feed the fires of his Inquisition with the heretical fat of his opponents; but beyond this the fall of the Popedom is of no more significance to them than the annexation of the little kingdom of Hanover to Prussia. But to the reader of *Elpis Israel*, if he be

one of “the Saints of the Most High,” it is a sign of inexpressible interest. It reminds him that the manifestation of the Divine Presence is approaching; not, however, to sweep away the dark cloud that overhangs the Eternal City, but to increase its blackness; and to bring “the time of the dead that they should be judged;” and to give authority to them whom He may approve, to “execute the judgment written” against them “who destroy the earth.”

The evacuation of the States of the Church by the French army of occupation will be nearly 1,260 years from the promulgation of the decree of Phocas, confirming the Bishop of the Catholic Apostasy in Rome, High Priest of his dominion. If these years were expressed in months, the expression would be exactly that found in Rev. 11:2 and 13:5: that is “forty-two months.” Is there nothing in this? See what took place exactly 1,260 years after Justinian’s original appointment of him to the Pontificate A.D. 533. This epoch was signalized by the fall of the French Monarchy; the resurrection of the democratic enemies of the Papacy and its superstitions; their ascension to power; and their castigation of the kings and priests of the Catholic world. This democratic power is what the Pope and his worshippers now style “THE REVOLUTION.” In the 18th century it abolished the Romish superstition in France; and in the early years of the 19th, it filled the Pope’s kingdom with darkness, and carried him off into captivity — Rev. 13:10; 16:10; so that “great fear falls upon all them who,” being the children of “His Holiness,” behold it. But there is approaching a resurrection, and an ascension to power, of a more formidable and terrific class of agents than those of The Revolution — more terrible, because almighty and invincible. “But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner’s fire, and like fuller’s soap” — Mal. 3:2.

But *after* the fall of the Popedom, to be no more restored, and *before* Christ’s presence on earth is announced to the nations, ROME, the Capital of an United Italy, will once more become Queen of the Italian peninsula. A future of great glory and splendour will illude the hearts of her emancipated citizens. Being the throne of a politically-regenerated and independent nation, she will “say in her heart, I sit queen, and am not a widow; and sorrow I shall not see.” Thus she will glorify herself with flatteries, when no longer the throne of a petty priestly principality, governed by thieves, hypocrites and impostors; but the Queen City of the Seven Hills, ruling the whole country, from the Alps to the Adriatic. But while contemplating this bright and glorious future, undimmed by sorrow and unbereft by widowhood, Christ will be in the world, and his Brethren whom he will have chosen, ready to execute “the judgment written” in Rev. 18. Because, therefore, of what she saith in her heart, “shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire; for strong is Yahweh Elohim that judgeth her” — verse 8.

Such is the Roman Question, the great sign of these times, and its settlement; when the King of Italy and his Roman Bishop, with all their officials, whoever they may be, go surging down like Sodom into the volcanic depths below — verse 21. Such is the divine vengeance to which

## PREFACE

she is hastening; because by her clerical sorceries she has deceived all the nations; “and in her is found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth” — verses 23-24. Blessed is he that watcheth: for the time is at hand.

*November 1, 1866.*

*Addendum.* Since the above was written, Rome has been evacuated by the French. The Pope is now in the Vatican without a protector; and face to face with “The Revolution.” A calm exists of ill omen to the pontiff; for in the political world as in the natural, a calm unruffled aërial generally precedes a storm.

But what is now the situation prophetically viewed? And what is the sign peculiar to it, indicative of what is next to be observed? It is a state of expectancy of a very temporary character. All the world is on the watch for something; but what shape it will be manifested in, is not discerned. The light which illumines the surrounding darkness shines from the testimony of John in Revelation 16:13-14. This is the sign in the Heavens, significant of the times composing the interval between 1848 and the appearing of the Ancient of Days. It is a sign divisible into three stages of development: *first*, the issuing forth of an unclean spirit like a Frog, from the Mouth of the Dragon: or government of Constantinople; *second*, of a similar spirit from the Mouth of the Beast: or government of Vienna; and *third*, of a like spirit from the Mouth of the False Prophet, or government of Rome. Of these, the first developed the Crimean War; the second, the two wars against Italy, in 1859 and 1866; the third stage is the present situation, the events of which are yet to be manifested.

The evacuation of Rome has prepared the arena for the development of the third and last section of the Frog Sign, into which phase the Roman Question has now entered. Something emanating from the policy of France, Italy, and the Revolution, one and all will cause the Roman Government to aim at its counteraction in its own suicidal manner; that which proceeds from it will be, and can only be, evil; the effect of which will contribute to that enagement of the nations which is characteristic of the end — Rev. 11:18. While these unclean Frog-like influences are bearing fruit, the advent of Christ, the resurrection of the saints, and the inception of the judgment, which “begins at the House of God,” become the astounding facts of the situation. With this conviction the reader is exhorted to look to his lamp, and to see that it is well trimmed and brightly burning; for it is only such that will be permitted to enter in to “the marriage of the Lamb” — Matt. 25:1-12; Rev. 19:7.

*December 23, 1866.*

## PUBLISHER'S COMMENTS

THE opening words to the Author's Preface make direct and immediate reference to "the signs of the times." Brother Thomas describes the year 1848 as "*Annus Mirabilis*" (Wonderful Year). He speaks from the dynamic perspective of Bible prophecy, not from the world's point of view. He makes special mention of the Congress of Vienna. This gathering of European political leaders arranged a peace settlement after the Napoleonic wars. They agreed that some of the territory lost to Austria be returned to her, and they also set up a German Confederation, which was a loose union of independent States, including Austria and Prussia. The Bourbons had ruled France from 1589 until the French Revolution (1792). In 1799 Napoleon overthrew the Revolutionary Government. He ruled until 1814, and again for about three months in 1815, before his final defeat at Waterloo. In 1814, after Napoleon had fallen from power, the Bourbons regained the throne, but lost it in the revolution of 1848 (concerning which Brother Thomas writes further in Part Third of his exposition; see p. 394). Louis Philippe, the last of the Bourbon rulers, abdicated the throne in favour of his grandson, the Count of Paris, on February 24, 1848. After 1848, only one more king was to rule in France, Napoleon III (1852-1870). In 1848 the Revolutionaries established the Second Republic, as the result of which all Frenchmen were given the right to vote. Louis Napoleon Bonaparte was elected to a four-year term as President. His crushing victory was primarily due to the peasantry. The workers also exercised considerable influence, giving Louis Napoleon their five and a half million votes.

When Europe received news of the proclamation of the Republic in France, unrest increased in almost every area of the Continent. Italy witnessed widespread trouble. General turmoil led to the "Heidelberg Revolution" which commenced on March 5. There were riots in Vienna on March 13, followed by the insurrection in Berlin on March 18. Changes were also witnessed in Hungary where, in addition to other developments, the Magyars absorbed Croatia and Transylvania; but the Transylvanians developed into one of the most turbulent classes in Europe. At an assembly held on May 15 they demanded recognition of the Rumanian nation and the enfranchisement of the peasants. The revolutionary events which had occurred in Vienna and Heidelberg further fueled flash-points in Germany. Beginning in the south, unrest spread in all directions.

The events described above provided a motivation and

PUBLISHER'S COMMENTS

encouragement to other “democratic” movements in many parts of Europe to actively and militantly pursue their objectives. As one historian wrote: “From March to June, 1848, hymns to liberty and fraternity had resounded from Paris to Poznan and Bucharest, from Holstein to Sicily. Two great States alone escaped the contagion: industrial England, capitalist and liberal, and agricultural Russia, feudal and autocratic. Continental Europe revealed its unity in the idea of revolution, but also its diversity in the development of that revolution.” (Jean Sigmann, “1848, *The Romantic and Democratic Revolutions in Europe*”). It is little wonder that Brother Thomas was so heartened and spiritually stimulated by the ebb and flow of roaring political tides which, in many respects, changed the face of Europe in that most amazing year, 1848. Present-day readers should prudently appreciate that we are living in similar times, thus more evidently heralding the nearness of Christ’s return.

— *The Publishers.*  
*January, 2000.*

# ELPIS ISRAEL

## PART FIRST

### THE RUDIMENTS OF THE WORLD

#### Chapter 1 — The Necessity of a Revelation

THE NECESSITY OF A REVELATION TO MAKE KNOWN THE ORIGIN, REASON, AND TENDENCY OF THINGS IN RELATION TO MAN AND THE WORLD AROUND HIM. IT IS AN INTELLIGIBLE MYSTERY, AND THE ONLY SOURCE OF TRUE WISDOM; BUT WHICH IS PRACTICALLY REPUDIATED BY THE MODERNS. — THE STUDY OF THE BIBLE URGED, TO FACILITATE AND PROMOTE WHICH IS THE OBJECT OF THIS VOLUME.

**R**EVOLVING upon its own axis, and describing an ample circuit through the boundless fields of space, is a planet of the solar system bearing upon its surface a population of nearly a thousand millions subject to sin, disease, and death. This orb of the starry heavens shines with a glory similar to that of its kindred spheres. Viewed from them, it is seen sparkling “like a diamond in the sky;” and with the rest of the heavens, declares the glory of God, and shows forth the handywork of Him that did create it.

This celestial orb, which is a world or system of itself, is styled THE EARTH. It is the habitation of races of animals which graze its fields, lurk in its forests, soar through its atmosphere, and pass through the paths of its seas. At the head of all these is a creature like themselves, animal, sensual, and mortal. He is called MAN. He has replenished the earth and subdued it, and filled it with his renown. His crimes, however, rather than his virtues, have illustrated and distinguished him with an unhappy pre-eminence above all other created things. His heart is evil; and, left to its uncontrolled impulses, he becomes licentious, merciless, and more cruel than the fiercest beast of prey.

Such is the being that claims the independent sovereignty of the globe. He has founded dominions, principalities, and powers; he has built great cities, and vaunted himself in the works of his hands, saying, “are not these by the might of my power, and for the honor of my majesty?” He repudiates all lordship over him, and claims the inalienable and inherent right of self government, and of establishing whatever civil and ecclesiastical institutions are best suited to his sensuality and caprice. Hence, at successive periods, the earth has become the arena of fierce and

pandemoniac conflicts; its tragedies have baptized its soil in blood, and the mingled cries of the oppressor and the victim have ascended to the throne of the Most High.

Skilled in the wisdom which comes from beneath, he is by nature ignorant of that which is “first pure, and then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality and without hypocrisy.” This is a disposition to which the animal man under guidance of his fleshly mind has no affinity. His propensity is to obey the lust of his nature; and to do its evil works, “which are adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, sects, envying, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like” (Gal. 5:19). All these make up the character of the world, “the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye, and the pride of life,” upon which is enstamped the seal of God’s eternal reprobation. “They who do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God,” but “they shall die.”

Such is the world of human kind! The great and impious enemy of God upon the earth. Its mind is not subject to His law, neither indeed can it be. What shall we say to these things? Is the world as we behold it a finality? Are generations of men, rebellious against God, and destroyers of the earth, to occupy it successively through an endless series of ages? Are men to repeat the history of the past forever? Is the earth always to be cursed, and sin and death to reign victorious? Who can answer these inquiries? If we survey the starry canopy, thence no sign or voice is given expressive of the truth. They declare the eternal power and divinity of their Creator, but they speak not of the destiny of the earth or of man upon it. If we question the mountains and hills, the plains and valleys, the rivers, seas, and oceans of the earth, and demand their origin, why they were produced, to what end they were created, their rocks, their strata, their fossils, or deposits, afford us no response. Turn we to man and ask him, “whence camest thou, and what is thy destiny? Whence all the evil of thy nature, why art thou mortal, who made thee, who involved thee in this wide-spread ruin and calamity on every side? Ask an infant of days the history of the past, and he can as well detail it, as man can answer these inquiries without a revelation from Him who is before all, and to whom is known from the beginning all He intends shall come to pass. So true is it, that, unaided by light from heaven, “since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside Thee what is prepared for him that waiteth for Him;” but adds the apostle in his comment upon these words of the prophet, “God hath revealed these things unto us by His spirit... which things we (apostles)

speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the holy spirit teacheth; interpreting spiritual things in spiritual words" (1Cor. 2:9-10, 13).

To the Bible, then, all must come at last if they would be truly wise in spiritual things. This is a great truth which few of the sons of men have learned to appreciate according to its importance. A man may be a theologian profoundly skilled in all questions of "divinity;" he may be well versed in the mythology of the heathen world; be able to speak all languages of the nations; compute the distances of orb from orb, and weigh them in the scales of rigid calculation; he may know all science and be able to solve all mysteries, — but if with all this, he be ignorant of "the things of the spirit;" if he know not the true meaning of the Bible; he seemeth only to be wise, while he is, in fact, a fool. Therefore, the apostle saith, "let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. And again, the Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain. Therefore *let no man glory in men*" (1Cor. 3:18-21). If our contemporaries could only attain to the adoption of this great precept "let no man glory in men," they would have overleaped a barrier which as a fatal obstacle prevents myriads from understanding and obeying the truth.

But while God lightly esteems the wisdom of the reputed wise, there is a wisdom which He invites all men to embrace. This is styled "*The wisdom of God in a mystery*;" it is also termed "the *hidden wisdom* which God ordained before the world, which none of the princes of this world knew." It is said to be hidden in a mystery, because until the apostolic age, it was not clearly made known. This will appear from the following texts: — "now to Him that is of power to establish you according to the revelation of THE MYSTERY, *which was kept secret* (*χρηνοῖς αἰωνίοις*) in the times of the ages, but *now* (in the time, or age, of the apostles) is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets made known to all nations *for the obedience of faith*" (Rom. 16:25-26). "By revelation God made known unto me, Paul, THE MYSTERY, which in other ages (former ages under the law of Moses) was not made known unto the sons of men as *it is now revealed* unto the holy apostles and prophets by the spirit, *that the Gentiles should be fellow heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of His promise in Christ by the gospel*" (Eph. 3:3, 5-6). Here is "the knowledge of God," in which are contained "exceeding great and precious promises," the understanding of which is able to make a man wise, and "a

partaker of the divine nature.” Now, although these hidden things have been clearly made known, they still continued to be styled the mystery; not because of their unintelligibility, but because they were once secret. Hence, the things preached unto the Gentiles, and by them believed, are styled by Paul, “the mystery of the faith,” and “the mystery of godliness,” some of the items of which he enumerates; such as, “God manifest in the flesh, justified by the spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up in glory” (1Tim. 3:9, 16). Thus an *intelligible mystery* characterizes the once hidden wisdom of God, and becomes the subject matter of an enlightened faith. This, however, is not the case with regard to religious systems which are not of the truth. Unintelligible mystery is the *ultima ratio* for all difficulties which are insoluble by the symbols of ecclesiastical communities, whose text of universal application is, that “secret things belong to God, but the things which are revealed, to us and to our children.” This is true; but, then, these things which were secret in the days of Moses, have been revealed by God to the apostles and prophets for our information. No one has any right to set up his own ignorance as the limit of what God hath revealed. A thing may be unknown to such a man, but it doth not therefore follow that it is either absolutely unintelligible or a secret. He may not know of it, or, if explained to him, he may not have intellect enough to comprehend it, or his prejudices, or sectarian bias may darken his understanding — this by no means makes the thing unintelligible or mysterious to other people. All that such persons have a right to say is, “we do not know anything about it.” They may confess their own ignorance, and resolve to look into the matter, or not; but they are presumptuously overstepping the bounds of propriety to venture to do more. This, however, is not the practice of those who have no secondary interests to subserve apart from the truth. They only desire to know that they may believe and do; but, where to know more, would jeopardize the “vested interests” of a sect, and extort the confession of its leaders and members, that they were in error and knew not the truth, investigation is discouraged, and the things proscribed as too speculative and mysterious for comprehension, or, if understood, of no practical utility. In this way mankind infold themselves as in the mantle of their self-esteem. They repress all progress, and glorify their own ignorance by detracting from things which they fear to look into, or apprehend are far above their reach.

Beside glorying in men, this unfortunate peculiarity of the human mind has developed the organisation of a system of things impiously hostile to the institutions and wisdom of Jehovah. It is a system of many subordinate

parts. It is animated by one spirit which, under various modifications, pervades and actuates the whole. It is an evil spirit, and may be detected wherever the dogma of unintelligible mystery is at work. The name of this system is “MYSTERY.” Its baneful effects began to be visible in the apostolic age. It was then styled, “*the Mystery of Iniquity*,” which, as was predicted, has, like a cancre, eaten out the truth, and substituted in place thereof, a civil and ecclesiastical constitution, styled, “Harlots and the Abominations of the Earth,” such as we behold on every side.

“Wisdom,” say the scriptures, “is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom; and with all thy getting get understanding. Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her. She shall give to thy head an ornament of grace; a *crown of glory* shall she deliver to thee.” If thou would’st, O reader, get this wisdom, happy art thou if thou findest it. “For the merchandize of it is better than the merchandize of silver, and the gain thereof than fine gold. She is more precious than rubies, and all things thou canst desire are not to be compared to her. Length of days is in her right hand; and in her left hand riches and honour. Her ways are ways of pleasantness, and all her paths are peace. She is A TREE OF LIFE to them that lay hold upon her; and happy is every one that retaineth her” (Prov. 3:14-18). Before the Son of God sent forth his apostles to proclaim the gospel of the kingdom in his name, “he opened their understandings that they might understand the scriptures.” If thou wouldst gain the knowledge of the wisdom of God which is so inestimable, and which is contained in the word they preached, thou must also be the subject of the same illumination. This is indispensable; for there is no obtaining of this commodity except through the scriptures of truth. These “are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. For all scripture given by the inspiration of God is also profitable for teaching, for conviction, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works” (2Tim. 3:15-17). What more dost thou want than perfection, and a crown of life and glory in the age to come? Search the scriptures with the teachableness of a little child, and thy labour will not be in vain. Cast away to the owls and to the bats the traditions of men, and the prejudices indoctrinated into thy mind by their means; make a whole burnt offering of their creeds, confessions, catechisms, and articles of religion; and, after the example of the Ephesian disciples, hand over your books of curious theological arts, and burn them before all (Acts 19:19). These mountains of rubbish have served the purposes of a dark and barbarous age; the word, the word of the living God

alone, can meet the necessities of the times. Let the example of the noble-minded Bereans be ours. They searched the scriptures daily to see if the things taught by the apostle were worthy of belief; “therefore they believed” (Acts 17:11-12). If then not even the preaching of an apostle was credited unaccompanied by scriptural investigation, is it not infinitely more incumbent on us that we should bring to a like test the opinions and precepts of the uninspired and fallible professional theologians of our day? Let us believe nothing that comes from “the pulpit,” “the altar,” or the press, not demonstrated by the grammatical sense of the scriptures. Let us be contented with nothing less than a “thus it is written,” and a “thus saith the Lord;” for He has laid it down in His law, that no one is worthy of belief who does not speak after this rule. “*To the law and to the testimony*, if they speak not according to THIS WORD, it is because there is no light in them” (Isa. 8:20). If then their light be darkness, how great is that darkness.

The scriptures can do every thing for us in relation to the light. This is known, felt, and keenly appreciated by all interested in the support of error. Hence, in the days of Diocletian, one of the pagan predecessors of Constantine, a decree was issued commanding the surrender of all copies of the Holy Scriptures: for it was found that so long as they obtained circulation the christian doctrine could never be suppressed. The Popes, as deadly, and more insidious, enemies of the truth than the pagan Roman emperors, followed the example of Diocletian. The bible and popery are as mutually hostile as the light of the sun and the thick darkness of Egypt that might be felt. But it is not paganism and popery alone that are practically hostile to a free and untrammelled investigation of the word of God. The Protestant world, while it deludes itself with the conceit that “the Bible, the Bible *alone*, is the religion of protestants” — while it spends its thousands for its circulation among the nations in their native tongues, — is itself hostile to the belief and practice of what it proclaims. The “Bible *alone*,” is not its religion; for if it were, why incumber its professors with the “Common Prayer,” Thirty-nine Articles, and all the other “notions” of a similar kind? To believe and practice the bible alone would be a sufficient ground of exclusion from all “orthodox churches.” When Chillingworth uttered the sentiment there was more truth in it than at this day; but now it is as far from the fact as that protestantism is the religion of Christ. To protest against an error, such as Romanism, and to affirm that every man has a right to worship God according to the dictates of his own conscience, is a very different thing to believing and obeying the gospel of the kingdom of God, and walking in all the institutions of the Lord

blameless. To do this would unchristianize a man in the estimation of state churches and sectarian denominations; for the bible religion requires a man to “*contend earnestly for the faith once delivered to the saints*” (Jude 3), which in these times cannot be done without upheaving the very foundations of the self complacent, self-glorifying and self-laudatory communions of the antipapal constitution of things. It is true, that no man or power, has a right to interfere between God and the conscience; but, it is also true, that no man has a right to worship God as he pleases. This is a Protestant fallacy. *Man has a right to worship God only in the way God has Himself appointed.* “In vain do ye worship Me teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.” This is the judgment pronounced by the wisdom of God upon all worship which He has not instituted, He declares it to be *vain worship*; concerning which the apostle to the Gentiles says, “Let no man judge you *in meat, or in drink, or in respect of a holy-day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath*; let no man beguile you of your reward in a *voluntary humility* and worshipping of angels. Be not subject to dogmatisms (*δογματισμοι*) after the commandments and traditions of men; which things have indeed a *show of wisdom* in WILL-WORSHIP and humility” (Col. 2:16, 23). These exhortations apply to all faith and worship, papal and protestant. If popery judges men in meats, protestantism doth the same in drinks, and in the sabbath; they both judge men in holy-days and “moveable feasts;” and though protestantism repudiates the worshipping of angels, it proclaims in its “fasts,” “preparations,” “concerts,” &c., a voluntary humility, and celebration of “saints and martyrs,” renowned in legendary tales for “the pride that apes humility.” Let the reader search the scriptures from beginning to end, and he will nowhere find such systems of faith and worship as those comprehended in the papal and protestant systems. The gospel of the kingdom of God in the name of Jesus is not preached among them; they are communions which are uncircumcised of heart; theological dissertations on texts, called “sermons,” are substituted for “reasoning out of the scriptures” — for “expounding and testifying the kingdom of God, and persuading men concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the Prophets” (Acts 28:16, 23, 31). Puseyism, Swedenborgianism, and all sorts of *isms*, to which in apostolic times the world was a total stranger, run riot among them; the lusts of the flesh, of the eye, and of the pride of life have extinguished even the energy and zeal of the antipapal rebellion out of which they have arisen; they are dead, twice-dead, plucked up by the roots, and therefore the time is come to cut them off as a rotten branch from the good olive tree (Rom. 11:17, 20, 22). Let

therefore every man that would eschew the wrath which is begun, and who would become an heir of the kingdom of God, save himself from the unholy, lifeless, and effete denominations of these “Latter Days.” By remaining in them, a man partakes of their evil deeds, and subjects himself to their evil influences. The word of man has silenced the word of God in their midst; and religion has degenerated into a professional commodity sold for cash according to the taste which most prevails in the soul-markets of the world.

Let us then “cease from men, whose breath is in their nostrils, for wherein are they to be accounted of.” “They be blind leaders of the blind” in whom is no light, because they speak not according to the law and the testimony of God. Let us repudiate their dogmatisms; let us renounce their mysteries; and let us declare our independence of all human authority in matters of faith and practice extra the word of God. The scriptures are able to make us wise, which the traditions of “divines” are not. Let us then come to these scriptures, for we have the assurance that he who seeks shall find; though, we must also bear in mind, that “many shall seek to enter in but shall not be able.” We must seek by the light of scripture, and not permit that light to be obscured by high thoughts and vain imaginations which exalt themselves against the knowledge of God. Great is the consolation that “the wise shall understand,” and “shall shine as the brightness of the firmament;” be this then our happiness, to understand, believe, and do, that we may be blessed in our deed, and attain to the glorious liberty and manifestation of the sons of God.

To the Bible then let us turn, as to “a light shining in a dark place,” and, with humility, teachableness, and independence of mind, let us diligently inquire into the things which it reveals for the obedience and confirmation of faith. The object before us then will be, to present such a connected view of this truthful and wonderful book as will open the reader’s eyes, and enable him to understand it, and expound it to others, that he may become “a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth;” and be able intelligently to “contend for the faith;” and by “turning many to righteousness, to shine as the stars for ever and ever.” In effecting this purpose, we must proceed as we would with any other book, or in teaching any of the arts and sciences; namely, begin at the beginning, or with the elements of things. This was the method adopted by the spirit of God in the instruction of the Israelites by Moses. He began his revelations by giving them, and us through them, an account of the creation of the heavens and the earth; of animals; and of man. This then would seem to be the proper place for us to start from; and as we have the

system completely revealed, which they had not, we may extend our inquiries into the reason, or philosophy, of things farther than they. Be this then our commencement; and may the Lord Himself prosper our endeavours to decipher and understand His will and testament, and to disentangle them from the crude traditions and dogmatisms of contemporary theologies, useful in their beginning as "*oppositions*" to the Mystery of Iniquity, but now "waxed old and ready to vanish away" with the thing they have antagonized; but which, though consumptive of the civil and ecclesiastical tyranny of the Image of the Beast, have by their glosses in effect taken from the people "the Key of Knowledge," and thus shut up the kingdom of heaven against men. Our endeavour will be to restore this "Key" that they may understand "the mysteries of the kingdom," and "have right to the tree of life, and enter in through the gates into the city" (Rev. 22:14). And this we will do if God permit.

## Chapter 2 — The Creation of Earth and Man

THE EARTH BEFORE THE CREATION OF ADAM THE HABITATION OF THE ANGELS WHO KEPT NOT THEIR FIRST ESTATE — A GEOLOGICAL ERROR CORRECTED — THE SABBATH DAY AND THE LORD'S DAY — THE FORMATION OF MAN AND WOMAN — THE "GREAT MYSTERY" OF HER FORMATION OUT OF MAN EXPLAINED — EDEN — THE GARDEN OF EDEN — THE ORIGINAL AND FUTURE PARADISES CONSIDERED — MAN'S PRIMITIVE DOMINION CONFINED TO THE INFERIOR CREATURES AND HIS OWN IMMEDIATE FAMILY — OF THE TWO TREES OF THE GARDEN — AND MAN IN HIS ORIGINAL ESTATE.

**T**HE *general* account of the work of the six days is contained in the first chapter of Genesis; while in the second is presented, among other things, a more particular narrative of the work of the sixth day in the formation of the first human pair.

Let the reader peruse the history of the creation as a revelation to himself as an inhabitant of the earth. It informs him of the order in which the things narrated would have developed themselves to his view, had he been placed on some projecting rock, the spectator of the events detailed. He must remember this. The Mosaic account is not a revelation to the inhabitants of other orbs remote from the earth of the formation of the boundless universe; but to man, as a constituent of the terrestrial system. This will explain why light is said to have been created four days before the sun, moon, and stars. To an observer on the earth, this was *the order of their appearance*; and in relation to him a *primary* creation, though absolutely pre-existent for millions of ages before the Adamic Era.

The *duration* of the earth's revolutions round the sun previous to the work of the first day is not revealed; but the evidences produced by the strata of our globe show that the period was long continued. There are indeed hints, casually dropped in the scriptures, which would seem to indicate, that our planet was inhabited by a race of beings anterior to the formation of man. The apostle Peter, speaking of the "false teachers" that would arise among Christians "by reason of whom the way of truth would be evil spoken of," illustrates the certainty of their "damnation" by citing three cases in point; namely, that of certain angels; that of the antediluvian world; and that of Sodom and Gomorrha. Now the earth, we know, was the place of judgment to the contemporaries of Noah and Lot, and seeing that these three are warnings to inhabitants of earth, it is probable, that they are all related to things pertaining to our globe in the order of their enumeration — first, judgment upon its pre-Adamerian inhabitants; secondly, upon the antediluvian world, which succeeded them; and thirdly, upon Sodom after the flood.

Peter says, that "the Angels," or pre-Adamerian inhabitants of the Earth, "sinned;" and Jude, in speaking of the same subject, reveals to us the

nature of their transgression. He says, verse 6, "the angels maintained not their original state, but forsook their own habitation." From which it would appear, that they had the ability to leave their dwelling if they pleased; secondly, that they were sometimes employed as messengers to other parts of the universe; this their name (*αγγελος*, *aggelos*, *one sent*) implies: thirdly, that they were forbidden to leave their habitation without special command to do so; and fourthly, that they violated this injunction and left it. Having transgressed the divine law, God would not forgive them; "but casting them down," or driving them back, "He committed them to everlasting chains of intense darkness to be reserved for judgment" (2Pet. 2:4). Hence, it is clear, when they were driven back to their habitation, some further catastrophe befell them by which their committal to darkness was effected. This probably consisted in the total wreck of their abode, and their entire submergence, with all the mammoths of their estate, under the waters of an overwhelming flood. Reduced to this extremity, the earth became "without form and empty; and darkness overspread the deep waters" (Gen. 1:1). Its mountains, hills, valleys, plains, seas, rivers, and fountains of waters, which gave diversity of "*form*" to the surface of our globe, all disappeared; and it became "*void*," or empty, no living creatures, angels, quadrupeds, birds, or fishes, being found any more upon it. Fragments, however, of the wreck of this pre-Adamer world have been brought to light by geological research, to the records of which we refer the reader, for a detailed account of its discoveries, with this remark, that its organic remains, coal fields, and strata, belong to the ages before the formation of man, rather than to the era of the creation, or the Noachic flood. This view of the matter will remove a host of difficulties, which have hitherto disturbed the harmony between the conclusions of geologists and the Mosaic account of the physical constitution of our globe.

Geologists have endeavoured to extend the six days into six thousand years. But this, with the scriptural data we have adduced, is quite unnecessary. Instead of six thousand, they can avail themselves of sixty thousand; for the scriptures reveal no length of time during which the terrene angels dwelt upon our globe. The six days of Genesis were unquestionably six diurnal revolutions of the earth upon its axis. This is clear from the tenor of the Sabbath law. "Six days shalt thou labour (O Israel) and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it." Would it be any fit reason that, because the Lord worked six periods of a thousand

or more years each, and had ceased about two thousand until the giving of the law, therefore the Israelites were to work six periods of twelve hours, and do no work on a seventh period or day of like duration? Would any Israelite or Gentile, unspoiled by vain philosophy, come to the conclusion of the geologists by reading the sabbath law? We believe not. Six days of ordinary length were ample time for Omnipotence with all the power of the universe at command to re-form the earth, and to place the few animals upon it necessary for the beginning of a new order of things upon the globe.

But what is to become of the Evil Angels in everlasting chains of darkness, and who shall be their judge? Jude says, they were committed “for *the judgment of THE GREAT DAY*.” He alludes to this great day in his quotation of the prophecy of Enoch, saying, “Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his Holy Ones (angels of His might, 1 Thes. 1:7) *to execute judgment* upon all,” &c. This coming of the Lord to judgment is termed by Paul “the Day of Christ” — “A DAY in which He will judge the world in righteousness by Jesus Christ” — during which, the saints, with angels ministering to them, having lived again, will reign with Christ a thousand years on the earth (2Thes. 2:2; Acts 17:31; Rev. 5:10; 20:4, 11-15). This is the Great Day of Judgment, a period of one thousand years, in which Christ and his saints will govern the nations righteously; judge the raised dead in his kingdom according to their works; and award to the rebel angels the recompense awaiting their transgression. “Know ye not,” saith Paul, “that *we* (the saints) *shall judge angels*? How much more things that pertain to this life?” (1Cor. 6:3). From these data, then, we conclude that these angels will be judged in the Day of Christ by Jesus and the saints.

In the period between the wreck of the globe as the habitation of the rebel angels and the epoch of the first day, the earth was as described in Genesis 1:2 “without form and void, and darkness upon the face of the deep” — a globe of mineral structure, submerged in water, and mantled in impenetrable night. Out of these crude materials, a new habitation was constructed, and adapted to the abode of new races of living creatures. On the first day, light was caused to shine through the darkness, and disclose the face of the waters; on the second, the atmosphere called Heaven, was formed, by which the fog was enabled to float in masses above the deep; on the third, the waters were gathered together into seas, and the dry, called the *Earth*, appeared. It was then clothed with verdure, and with fruit and forest trees, preparatory to the introduction of herbivorous creatures to inhabit it. On the fourth day, the expanded atmosphere became transparent, and the shining orbs of the universe could be seen from the

surface of the earth. Our globe was then placed in such astronomical relation to them as to be subjected by their influences to the vicissitudes of day and night, summer and winter; and that they might serve for signs, and for years. Thus, the sun, moon, and stars which God had made, by giving the earth's axis a certain inclination to the plane of the ecliptic, became diffusive of the most genial influences over the land and sea. It was now a fit and beautiful abode for animals of every kind. The dwelling place was perfected, well aired, and gloriously illuminated by the lights of heaven; food was abundantly provided; and the mansional estate waited only a joyous tenantry to be complete.

This was the work of the fifth and sixth days. On the fifth, fish and water-fowl were produced from the teeming waters; and on the sixth, cattle, reptiles, land-fowl, and the beasts of the earth, came out of "the dust of the ground," male and female, after their several kinds (Gen.1:20-23; 2:19).

But among all these there was not one fit to exercise *dominion over the animal world*, or to reflect the divine attributes. Therefore, the Elohim said, "Let *us* make man in *our* image, after *our* likeness: and let them have dominion over the living creatures." So Elohim created man in His image; male and female created He them. Further details concerning the formation of the human pair are given in the second chapter of Genesis, verses 7, 18, 21-25. These passages belong to the work of the sixth day; while that from verse 8 to 14 pertains to the record of the third; and from 15 to 17 is parallel with chapter 1:28-31, which completes the history of the sixth.

"Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them:" and the Jehovah Elohim, on reviewing the stupendous and glorious creation elaborated by the Spirit, pronounced it "VERY GOOD." Then the Elohim, or "Morning Stars sang together, and all the Sons of God shouted for joy"(Job 38:4-7).

## OF THE SABBATH DAY AND THE LORD'S DAY

On the seventh day, which was neither longer nor shorter than the days which preceded it, "God ended His work which He had made;" and because of this notable event, "He blessed and sanctified it." A day is blessed, because of what is or will be imparted to those who are commanded to observe it. The sanctification of the day implies the setting of it apart that it might be kept in some way different from other days. The manner of its original observance may be inferred from the law concerning it when it was enjoined upon the Israelites. To them it was said,

“remember the sabbath day to keep it holy.” If it be asked, how was it to be kept holy? the answer is, “in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor any one or thing belonging to thee;” and the reason for this total abstinence from work is referred to the Lord’s own example in that “He rested the seventh day.” The nature of its observance in the ages and generations, and the recompense thereof, is well expressed in the words of Isaiah; — “if thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath from doing thy pleasure on My holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honorable; and shalt honor Him not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: then shalt thou delight thyself in the Lord, and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father; for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it” (Isa. 58:13-14). In this passage the conditions are stated upon which faithful Israelites might inherit the blessing typified by the rest of the seventh day. They were joyfully to devote themselves to the way of the Lord. They were not simply to abstain from work, yawning and grumbling over the tediousness of the day, and wishing it were gone, that they might return to their ordinary course of life; but they were to esteem it as a delightful, holy, and honorable day. Their pleasure was to consist in doing what the Lord required, and in talking of “the exceeding great and precious promises” He had made. To do this was “not speaking their own words,” but the Lord’s words. Such an observance as this, however, of the sabbath day, implies a faithful mind and a gracious disposition as the result of knowing the truth. Neither antediluvian nor postdiluvian could “call the sabbath a delight,” who was either ignorant or faithless of the import of the promise “thou shalt delight thyself in the Lord, and ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed with the heritage of Jacob.” A man who simply looked at the seventh day as a sabbath in which he was interdicted from pleasures, and conversation agreeable to him, and from the money-making pursuits in which he delighted, would regard the day more as a weekly punishment, than as joyous and honorable. Though he might mechanically abstain from work, he did not keep it so as to be entitled to the blessing which belonged to the observance of the day to the Lord. It was irksome to him, because being faithless he perceived no reward in keeping it; and “without faith it is impossible to please God.”

The reward to antediluvian, and postdiluvian patriarchs and Israelites, for a faithful observance, or commemoration of Jehovah’s rest from His creation-work, was “delight in the Lord, riding upon the high places of the earth, and feeding with the heritage of Jacob.” This was neither more nor less than a promise of inheriting the kingdom of God, which is a summary

of “the things hoped for and the things unseen,” or the subject matter of the faith that pleases God. When that kingdom is established all who are accounted worthy of it will “delight or joy in the Lord;” and occupy “the high places of the earth,” ruling over the nations as his associate kings and priests; and share in the “new heavens and earth,” in which dwells righteousness, when Jerusalem shall be made a rejoicing, and her people Israel a joy (Matt. 25:23, 34; Rev. 2:26-27; 3:21; 5:9-10; 20:4; Dan. 7:18, 22, 27; Isa. 65:17-18). The knowledge and belief of these things was the powerful and transforming motive which caused Abel, Abraham, Moses, Jesus, &c., to “call the sabbath a delight, holy of the Lord, and honorable;” and to observe it as the sons of Belial cannot possibly do. But while this was the motive, even faith, which actuated the sons of God in their keeping holy the seventh day, Jehovah did not permit the faithless to transgress or desecrate it with impunity. We know not what penalty, if any, was attached to its violation before the flood; but its desecration under the Mosaic constitution was attended with signal and summary vengeance, as will appear from the following testimonies:—

1. “And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, speak thou unto the children of Israel, saying, verily My sabbaths ye shall keep: for it is a *sign between Me and you throughout your generations*; that ye may know that I am the Lord that doth sanctify you. Ye shall keep the sabbath therefore: for it is holy *unto you*. Every one that defileth it shall surely be put to death: for whosoever doeth *any work* therein, that soul shall be cut off from among his people. Six days may work be done, but in the *seventh* is the sabbath of rest, holy to the Lord; *whosoever doeth any work on the sabbath day shall surely be put to death*. Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the sabbath, to observe the sabbath throughout their generations, for a perpetual covenant. It is a *sign between Me and the children of Israel for ever*; for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day He rested and was *refreshed*” (Exo. 31:12-17).

2. “Remember, O Israel, that thou wast a servant in the land of Egypt, and that the Lord thy God brought thee out thence through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm; therefore the Lord thy God commanded thee to keep the sabbath day” (Deu. 5:15).

3. “Six days shall work be done, but on the *seventh* day there shall be to you a holy day, a sabbath of rest to the Lord: whosoever doeth work therein shall be put to death. *Ye shall kindle no fire throughout your habitations upon the sabbath day*” (Exo. 35:2-3).

4. “And while the children of Israel were in the wilderness, they found a man that gathered sticks upon the sabbath day. And they that found him gathering sticks brought him unto Moses and Aaron, and unto all the

congregation. And they put him in ward, because it was not declared what should be done to him. And the Lord said unto Moses, the man shall be surely put to death: all the congregation shall stone him with stones without the camp. And all the congregation brought him without the camp, and stoned him with stones, and he died; as the Lord commanded Moses” (Num. 15: 32-36).

5. “Thus saith the Lord; take heed to yourselves, and *bear no burden* on the sabbath day, nor bring it in by the gates of Jerusalem: neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on the sabbath day, neither do ye any work, but hallow ye the sabbath day, as I commanded your fathers, And it shall come to pass if ye diligently hearken unto Me, saith the Lord, to bring in no burden through the gates of this city on the sabbath day, to do no work therein: *then shall there enter into the gates of this city kings and princes sitting upon the throne of David*, riding in chariots and upon horses, they and their princes, the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem: and this city shall remain for ever. And they shall come from the cities of Judah, and from the places about Jerusalem, and from the land of Benjamin, and from the plain, and from the mountains, and from the south, bringing burnt offerings, and sacrifices, and meat offerings, and incense, and bringing sacrifices of praise, unto the temple of the Lord. But if ye will not hearken unto Me to hallow the sabbath day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the gates of Jerusalem on the sabbath day; then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched” (Jer. 17:21-27).

6. “Abide ye every man in his tent, let no man go out of his place on the seventh day. So the people rested on the seventh day” (Exo. 16:29).

From these testimonies it is clear that it was unlawful for servants in the families of Israel to light fires, cook dinners, harness horses, drive out families to the synagogues, or priests to the temple to officiate in the service of the Lord. The visiting of families on the sabbath day, the taking of excursions for health or for preaching, and conversing about worldly or family, or any kind of secular affairs, was also illegal, and punishable with death. The law, it will be observed also, had regard to the *seventh*, and to no other day of the week. It was lawful to do all these things on the *first* or *eighth* day (some particular ones however excepted), but not on the seventh. On this day, however, it was “lawful to do good;” but then this good was not arbitrary. Neither the priests nor the people were the judges of the good or evil, but the law only which defined it. “On the sabbath days the priests in the temple profaned the sabbath, and were blameless” (Matt. 12:5); for the law enjoined them to offer “two lambs of the first year without spot as the burnt-offering of every sabbath” (Num. 28:9-10). This

was a profanation of the seventh-day law, which prohibited “any work” from being done; and had not God commanded it they would have been “guilty of death.” It was upon this ground that Jesus was “guiltless;” for he did the work of God on that day in healing the sick as the Father had commanded him.

“The sabbath was made for man and not man for the sabbath: therefore,” said Jesus, “the Son of Man is Lord also of the sabbath day” (Mk. 2:27). It was a wise and beneficent institution. It prevented the Israelites from wearing out themselves and their dependants by incessant toil; and revived in them a weekly remembrance of the law and promises of God. It was, however, only “*a shadow of things to come*,” the substance of which is found in the things which pertain to the Anointed One of God (Col. 2:16-17; and 14). It was a part of “the rudiments of the world” inscribed on “the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us,” and which the Lord Jesus “took out of the way, nailing it to his cross.” When he lay entombed he rested from his labours, abiding in his place all the seventh day. Having ended his work, he arose on the eighth day, “and was refreshed.” The shadowy sabbath disappeared before the brightness of the rising of the sun of righteousness; who, having become the accursed of the law, delivered his brethren from its sentence upon all.

The ordinances of the law of Moses are styled by Paul “the rudiments,” or “elements of the world,” which, in Galatians, he also terms “weak and beggarly elements, whereunto they desired again to be in bondage.” They evinced this desire by “observing *days*, and months, and times, and years” (Gal. 4:3, 5, 9-10); not being satisfied with the things of Christ, but seeking to combine the Mosaic institutions with the gospel. This was Judaizing, and the first step to that awful apostasy by which the world has been cursed for so many ages. When the Mosaic constitution, as “the *representation* of the knowledge and the truth,” had “waxed old” by the manifestation of the substance to a sufficient extent to nullify it, it “vanished away” by being “cast down to the ground” by the Roman power, and with it the law of the seventh day. Even before its abolition, Paul expressed his fear of the Galatians “lest he should have bestowed labour upon them in vain,” seeing that they were becoming zealous of the ordinances of the law. They seemed not to understand that the Mosaic economy was only a temporary constitution of things, “added because of transgressions, *till the seed should come*;” that when he came, “he redeemed them from the curse of the law, being made a curse for them;” and that therefore they had nothing to fear, nor to hope for from keeping, or transgressing its commands. They had got it into their heads that

“except they were circumcised and kept the law of Moses, as well as believed and obeyed the gospel of the kingdom, they could not be saved” (Acts 15:1, 5). Therefore they “desired to be under the law” and began to busy themselves about “keeping the sabbath,” and doing other works which Moses had enjoined upon Israel. Paul was very much distressed at this, and describes himself as “travailing in birth again until Christ be formed in them.” They had been delivered from “the yoke of bondage” by putting on Christ; but by seeking to renew their connection with Moses’ law, they were selling their birth-right for a mess of pottage. “I say unto you,” saith Paul, “that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that *he is a debtor to do the whole law*. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.” A partial observance of the law can do no one any good. If he kept the sabbath in the most approved manner, but neglected the sacrifices, or eat swine’s flesh, he was as accursed as a thief or a robber; for to one under the law it saith, “Cursed is every one that continueth not in *all things* which are written in the book of the law to do them;” hence even the sinless Jesus was cursed by it, because he was crucified; for it is written, “Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree” (Gal. 3; 4; 5:4). What hope then is there for Jew or Gentile of escaping the curse of the law, seeing that from the very nature of things connected with the present state of Jerusalem it is impossible to observe it, save in the few particulars of “meat and drink, or in respect of the sabbath partially,” &c. The observance of the seventh day was regulated by the Mosaic law, and the penalties due to its “desecration,” or “profanation,” are pronounced by it alone; but, it is clear that the law being taken out of the way, or abolished, by Jesus who nailed it to his cross, there remain no more retributions for the non-observance of its appointments; and therefore there is no transgression in working or pleasure taking, or in speaking one’s own words on the seventh day.

On the first day of the creation-week God said, “Let there be light, and there was light;” so on the first day of the week “THE TRUE LIGHT” came forth from the darkness of the tomb “like dew from the womb of the morning.” This event constituted the day after the sabbath, or eighth day, the day of the Lord’s resurrection; and therefore styled by his disciples “THE LORD’S DAY.” It is a day to be much remembered by them, because it assures them of their justification “in him,” of their own resurrection to life, and of the certainty of his ruling or “judging the world in righteousness” as Jehovah’s king, when they also shall reign with him as kings and priests to God (Rom. 4:25; 8:11; 1Cor. 15:14, 20; Acts 17:31; Rev. 5:9-10). This day is also notable on account of the special interviews

which occurred between Jesus and his disciples after his resurrection (Jn. 20:19, 26). He ascended to heaven on this day, even the forty-third from his crucifixion; and seven days after, that is the fiftieth, being that Lord's day styled "the day of Pentecost," the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out upon the apostles, and the gospel of the kingdom preached for the first time *in his name*.

Power being in the hands of their enemies the christians of the Hebrew nation still continued to observe the seventh day according to the custom. Hence we find the apostles frequenting the synagogues on the sabbath days and reasoning with the people out of the scriptures (Acts 17:2, 17; 18:4; 19:8). To have done otherwise would have been to create an unnecessary prejudice, and to let slip one of the best opportunities of introducing the gospel to the attention of the Jewish public. They did not forsake the synagogues until they were expelled. While they frequented these, however, on the seventh day, they assembled themselves together with the disciples whose assemblies constituted the churches of the saints and of God. They ordained elders over these societies, and "taught them to observe all things whatsoever Jesus had commanded them" (Matt. 28:20; Acts 2:42; 14:22-23). In his letter to the Hebrew christians he exhorts them "not to forsake the assembling of themselves together" (Heb. 10:25). Such an exhortation as this implies *a stated time* and place of assembly. On what day, then, did the churches of the saints meet to exhort one another so as to provoke to love and good works? Certainly not on the seventh day, for then the apostles were in the synagogues. What day then more appropriate than the Lord's day, or first day of the week? Now it cannot be affirmed that the saints were commanded to meet on this day, because there is no testimony to that effect in the New Testament. But, it is beyond dispute, that they did assemble themselves together on the first day of the week, and the most reasonable inference is that they did so in obedience to the instruction of the apostles from whose teaching they derived all their faith and practice, which constituted them the disciples of Jesus.

To keep the first day of the week to the Lord is possible only for the saints. There is no law, except the emperor Constantine's, that commands *sinners* to keep *holy* the first, or eighth, day, or Sunday as the Gentiles term it. For a sinner to keep this day unto the Lord he must become one of the Lord's people. He must believe the gospel of the kingdom and name of Christ, and become obedient to it, before any religious service he can offer will be accepted. He must come under law to Christ by putting on Christ before he can keep the Lord's day. Having become a christian, if he would keep the day to the Lord, he must assemble with a congregation of

New Testament saints, and assist in edifying and provoking them to love and good works, in showing forth the death of Jesus, in giving thanks to the Father, in celebrating the resurrection of Christ, and in praising and blessing God. Under the gospel, or “law of liberty,” he is subjected to no “yoke of bondage” concerning a sabbath day. It is his delight when an opportunity presents, to celebrate in this way the day of resurrection. He requires no penal statutes to compel him to a formal and disagreeable self-denial, or “duty;” for it is his meat and drink to do the will of his Father who is in heaven.

The law of Moses was delivered to the Israelites and not to the Gentiles, who were therefore “without the law.” “What things soever the law saith, it says to them who are under the law;” consequently the nations were not amenable to it and though they obtained not the blessings of Mount Gerizim (unless they became faithful Jews by adoption), neither were they obnoxious to the curses of Mount Ebal (Deu. 27:9-26). The faithless Jews and Gentiles are equally aliens from the precepts of Christ and his apostles. What these prescribe is enjoined upon the disciples of Jesus. They only are “under law to Christ.” “What have I,” says Paul, “to do to judge them that are without? God judgeth them” (1Cor. 5:12-13). He has caused the gospel of the kingdom to be preached to sinners “for the obedience of faith.” When they are judged, it will be for “not obeying the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ” (2Thes. 1:7-10), and not because they do not “go to church,” or do not keep a sabbath instituted by a semi-pagan emperor of the fourth century. The sabbath God requires sinful men to observe is to *cease from the works of the flesh*, as completely as He rested from the work of creation on the seventh day, that they may enter into the millennial rest that remaineth for the people of God (Heb. 4:9-11).

Men frequently err in their speculations from inattention to the marked distinction which subsists in the scriptures between those classes of mankind termed “saints” and “sinners.” They confound what is said to, or concerning, the one, with what is said in relation to the other. Relatively to the institutions of God they are as near or afar off as are “citizens” and “foreigners” to the laws and constitution of the United States. “What the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law.” This is a principle laid down by Paul concerning the law of Moses, which is equally true of the codes of all nations. “Citizens” are the saints, or separated ones, of the particular code by which they are insulated from all other people; while “foreigners” or “aliens” from their commonwealth are sinners in relation to it; for they live in other countries in total disregard of its institutions, and doing contrary to its laws, and yet are blameless: so that if they were to visit the country of that commonwealth, they would not be punished for

their former course, because they were not under law to it. Let them, however, while sojourning there continue their native customs, and they would become guilty and worthy of the punishment made and provided for such offenders. It is a fact, that "God blessed and sanctified," or set apart, "the seventh day;" and doubtless, Adam and his wife rested, or intermitted, their horticultural tendance upon that day. Yea, we may go further and say, that it is extremely probable that "the sons of God" before the flood, worshipped God according to "His way" upon that day; but in all the history of that long period, which intervened from the sanctification of the seventh day to the raining down bread from heaven for the Israelites in the wilderness (Exo. 16), there is not the least hint of any punishment for breaking the sabbath day. Guiltiness before God cannot therefore be argued against the Gentiles so as to entitle them to death or reprobation, predicated on the threatenings of the patriarchal code. Whatever the appointment might be, it was no doubt significative of the blessings to be obtained through observing it; not alone, but in connection with the other matters which made up "the way of God."

As I have shown, the observance of the seventh day was obligatory only upon the Israelites so long as the Mosaic code was in force, being "a sign" between God and them. The sabbaths belong to the land and people of Israel, and can be only kept according to the law while they reside in the country. This will appear from the fact that the law requires that "two lambs of the first year without spot" should be offered with other things "as the burnt-offering of every sabbath;" an offering which, like all the offerings, &c., must be offered in a temple in Jerusalem where the Lord has placed His name, and not in the dwelling places of Jacob. Israel must therefore be restored to their own country before even they can keep the sabbath. Then, when "the throne is established in mercy; and he (the Lord Jesus) shall sit upon it in truth in the tabernacle of David, judging, and seeking judgment, and hasting righteousness" (Isa. 16:5), then, I say, "shall the priests, the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of My sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from Me, come near to Me to minister unto Me, and they shall stand before Me to offer unto Me the fat and the blood, saith the Lord God: and *they shall hallow My sabbaths*" (Eze. 44:15, 24).

But these sabbaths will be no longer celebrated on the seventh day. They will be changed from the seventh to the eighth, or first day of the week, which are the same. The "*dispensation of the fulness of times*" (Eph. 1:10), popularly styled the Millennium, will be the antitype, or substance, of the Mosaic feast of tabernacles which was "a shadow of things to come." In this type, or pattern, Israel were to rejoice before the Lord for

seven days, beginning “on the fifteenth day of the seventh month, when they had gathered the fruit of the land.” In relation to the *first day* of the seven, the law says, “it shall be a holy convocation: *ye shall do no servile work therein.*” This was what we call Sunday. The statute then continues, “on the *eighth day,*” also Sunday, “shall be a holy convocation unto you, and ye shall offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord: it is a solemn assembly; and *ye shall do no servile work therein.*” Again, “on the first day shall be a sabbath, and on the eighth day shall be a sabbath” (Lev. 23:34-43). Thus, in this “pattern of things in the heavens” — the first and eighth days are constituted holy days in which no work was to be done. It also represents the palm-bearing or victorious ingathering of the twelve tribes of Israel from their present dispersion to the land of their fathers, “when the Lord shall set His hand *a second time* to recover the remnant of His people” (Isa. 11:11). Three times in four verses does Zechariah style the yearly going up of the Gentiles to Jerusalem to worship the king, the Lord of Hosts, there, the keeping of the feast of tabernacles (Zech. 14:16-19); an event which is consequent upon the destruction of the dominion represented by Nebuchadnezzar’s image, and the re-establishment of the kingdom and throne of David. This national confluence of the Gentiles to Jerusalem is characteristic of Messiah’s times; and of the true or real festival of tabernacles, when he will “confess to God among the Gentiles, and sing unto His name,” and “they shall rejoice with His people,” Israel (Rom. 15:9-10). Referring to this time, the Lord says, “the place of My throne, and the place of the soles of My feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel *for ever*, and My holy name shall the House of Israel *no more* defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places ... they have even defiled My holy name by their abominations that they have committed: wherefore I have consumed them in Mine anger. Now let them put away their whoredom, and the carcasses of their kings, far from Me, and *I will dwell in the midst of them for ever*” (Eze. 43:7-9). This is clearly a prophecy of what shall be hereafter, because the House of Israel still continues to defile God’s holy name by their abominations; but when this comes to pass they shall defile it “*no more.*”

After the declaration of these things, Ezekiel is commanded to show them the description of the temple which is destined to be “the house of prayer for all nations,” with the ordinances, forms, and laws thereof. The Lord God then declares, “the ordinances of the altar *in the day when they shall make it,*” and when the Levites of the seed of Zadok shall approach unto Him. The “cleansing of the altar,” and the consecration of the priests, is then effected by the offerings of *seven days*. “And when these days are

expired, it shall be, that *upon the eighth day, and so FORWARD*, the priests shall make your burnt offerings upon the altar, and your peace offerings; and I will accept you, O Israel, saith the Lord” (verse 27). Thus the Lord’s day, the day of his resurrection from his seventh-day incarceration in the tomb, becomes *the sabbath day of the future age* which shall be hallowed by the priests of Israel, and be observed by all nations as a day of holy convocation in which they shall rejoice, and do no manner of servile work at all.

This change of the sabbath from the seventh to the eighth, or first, day of the week, is the full development and establishment of the observance of the Lord’s day by the disciples of Jesus since the times of the apostles. Constantine, though not a christian himself, paid homage to the truth so far as to compel the world to respect the day on which Christ Jesus rose from the dead. Hence, in 328, he ordained that the day should be kept religiously, which a judaizing clergy construed into a sabbatical observance according to the Mosaic law concerning the seventh day. This is the origin of that sabbatarianism which so ludicrously, yet mischievously, illustrates the Blue Laws of Connecticut, (by these a woman was forbidden to kiss her child on the sabbath!), the zeal of the Agnews and Plumptres of the House of Commons, and the rhapsodies of the pietists of the passing day. These well-meaning persons, whose zeal outruns their knowledge, seem not to be aware that Christ and his apostles did not promulge a civil and ecclesiastical code for the nations, when they preached the gospel of the kingdom. Their object was not to give them laws and constitutions; but to separate a peculiar people from the nations who should afterwards rule them justly and in the fear of the Lord, when the dispensation of the fulness of times should be introduced (Acts 15:14; 1Cor. 6:2; 2Sam. 23:3-4; Tit. 2:11). To be able to do this, these peculiars were required to be “holy, unblameable, and unreprouceable before God” (Col. 1:22-23; 1Thes. 2:19; 3:13). To this end instructions were delivered to them, that under the divine tuition “they might be renewed in the spirit of their mind; and put on the new man which after God’s image is created in righteousness and true holiness.” As for “those without” “who receive not the love of the truth, that they might be saved, God sent them a strong delusion, that they should believe a lie” (2 Thes. 2:10-12), as a punishment. They are left to govern themselves by their own laws until the time arrives for Christ to take away their dominion and assume the sovereignty over them conjointly with “the people of the saints.” If they please to impose upon themselves yokes of bondage, binding themselves to keep the *first* day of the week according to the Mosaic law of the *seventh* day they are left at liberty to do so. But for this act of “voluntary

humility” they are entitled to no recompense from God, seeing that He has not required it of them. The rewards due for observing a judaized Lord’s day voluntarily inflicted upon themselves; or, the pains and penalties to which they may be entitled for its “profanation,” are such, and such only, as result from the will and pleasure of the unenlightened lawgivers of the nations. It is a wise regulation to decree a cessation from labour and toil, for man and beast during one day in seven; but it betrays egregious misunderstanding of the scriptures, and singular superstition to proclaim perdition to men’s souls in flaming brimstone, if they do not keep it according to the Mosaic law of the seventh day. All I need say in conclusion is, that if it be necessary to keep Sunday as the Jews were required to keep Saturday by the law of Moses, then those who make so much ado about sabbath-breaking are themselves as guilty as those they denounce for the unholy and profane. “He that offendeth in one point is guilty of the whole.” If they do not keep open shop, or perambulate the parks and fields, or take excursions, or go to places of public resort and amusement on the Lord’s day — yet, they light fires in their dwellings and meeting houses, they entertain their friends at comfortable warm dinners, drive to church in splendid equipages, annoy the sick and distract the sober-minded with noisy bells, bury the dead, speak their own words, &c. — all of which is a violation of the divine law which saith, “thou shalt not do *any work*, thy man-servant, nor thy maid-servant, nor thy cattle;” and “thou shalt not speak *thine own words*.” This would certainly put to silence nearly all the preachers of the day; whose “sermons,” when made by themselves, are emphatically *their own* in thoughts and *words* without dispute. It is not only ridiculous, but down right pharisaism, the fuss that is made about breaking the sabbath. Let the zealots “first cast the beam out of their own eyes; and then will they see clearly to cast out the mote from the eyes of others.” If they would “keep the day to the Lord,” let them believe and obey the gospel of the kingdom in the name of Jesus; and then “continue stedfastly in the apostles’ doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers” (Acts 2:42) on the Lord’s day; and cease from the works of sinful flesh (Gal. 5:19) every day of the week; and they will doubtless “delight in the Lord, and ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed with the heritage of Jacob in the kingdom of God,” as the mouth of the Lord hath spoken.

Of the things then which have been written under this head this is the sum.

1. The six creation-days were each as long as the seventh, whose duration is defined by the Mosaic law; and consequently the geological

notion of their being six several periods of many centuries each, falls to the ground as a mere conceit of infidel philosophy.

2. The Lord God ended His work on the seventh day, “and was refreshed” by the songs of the Morning Stars, and the joyous shouts of the Sons of God.

3. To celebrate His rest He constituted it holy and a day of blessing. Hence it was commemorative of the past, and “*a shadow of things to come.*”

4. The seventh day was observed by Adam and Eve as a day of delight before they became sinners. The immediate cause of their joyousness on the day of rest is not testified. It is certain it was not a burdensome day; for sin had not yet marred their enjoyments. It was probably because of the gracious interviews granted them by the Lord God on that day; and of the revelations made to them of the things contained in the blessing pronounced upon it when He “blessed and sanctified it.”

5. There is no record, or hint, of the existence of a penal statute for not observing the seventh day, from the sanctification of it till the raining down bread from heaven for the Israelites in the wilderness of Egypt.

6. The observance of the seventh day by absolute rest from every kind of work and pleasure-taking, accompanied by a peculiar sacrifice on the brazen altar of the temple, and spiritual delight in its blessedness, was its Mosaic celebration enjoined upon the Israelites, and their dependants in Palestine, and upon them alone.

7. Its profanation by citizens of the commonwealth of Israel was punishable with death by stoning.

8. Israel was especially commanded to remember the seventh day and keep it as appointed by the law; because God in creating their world brought them out of Egypt, and rested from the work of its creation when He gave them a temporary and typical rest under Joshua in the land of Canaan.

9. For an Israelite to remember the seventh day to keep it holy, spiritually as well as ceremonially, so as to obtain the blessing which it shadowed forth, he must have had an Abrahamic faith (Rom. 4:12, 18-22 — read the whole chapter diligently) in the promised blessing, and have ceased or rested from the works of “sinful flesh.”

10. The blessing promised to Israelites, who were Abraham’s sons by faith as well as by fleshly descent, for a spiritual observance of the seventh day (and which, until the “the handwriting,” or Mosaic law, was blotted out and nailed to the cross, could not be spiritually observed and ceremonially profaned) was, that they should “delight in the Lord, ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed with the heritage of Jacob their father,” when

the time to fulfil the promises made to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, should arrive.

11. The blessing pronounced on a national observance of the seventh day was the uninterrupted continuance of the throne of David, and great national prosperity. Its desecration to be punished by the breaking up of the commonwealth of Israel and desolation of their country.

12. The Mosaic observance of the seventh day was appointed as “*a sign*” between God and the twelve tribes of Israel. It was a holy day *to them*, and to be observed perpetually throughout their generations (Matt. 1:17 — the forty-two generations from Abraham to Christ, Col. 1:26).

13. It was lawful for Israelites to do good on the seventh day; but they were not permitted to be the judges of the good or evil. This was defined by the law. The priests profaned the sabbath by hard work in slaying and burning the seventh day sacrifices on the altar, yet they were blameless; because this was a good work which the Lord of the sabbath commanded them to do.

14. Having *finished the work* the Father had given him to do (Jn. 17:4), on the *sixth* day of the week, Jesus, while suspended on the accursed tree, cried with a loud voice, “*It is finished!*” (Jn. 19:28-30). “All things were now accomplished,” so that the Mosaic handwriting was blotted out, being nailed with him to the cross, and taken out of the way as a rule of life. The Lord Jesus “rested from his labours” on the seventh day in the silent tomb, and “his disciples rested according to the commandment” (Lk. 23:56). He abode in his place, and did not go out of it until the sabbath was at an end (Mk. 16:1). But, on the eighth day, styled also the first day, God gave him liberty (Matt. 28:2), he left the tomb, and “was refreshed.” Having “spoiled the principalities and the powers” constituted by the handwriting, he made the spoliation manifest, “triumphing over them in himself” (*ἐν αὐτῷ*) that is, in his resurrection; thus, for ever delivering men from the bondage of the law, which Peter says, “was a yoke which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear” (Acts 15:10). With the abolition of the Mosaic handwriting the obligation to keep the seventh day as a rule of spiritual life was cancelled as a matter of course.

15. The apostles and christians (Acts 21:20) of the Hebrew nation in Palestine continued a ceremonial observance of the Mosaic festivals (Acts 21:24-26 — the annual atonement for sin excepted) and of the seventh day, until the destruction of the commonwealth by the Romans, on the same principle that New Testament christians among the nations now observe Sunday and the laws; not as a means of justification before God, but as mere national customs for the regulation of society.

16. Hebrew christians who proposed to blend the law of Moses with

that of Jesus as a spiritual rule, or means of justification, and consequently to keep holy the seventh day, were severely reproved by the apostles, who stigmatized it as “Judaizing” (Gal. 2:14) (*Ιουδαῖζειν*).

17. The judaizing christians endeavoured to impose the observance of the law upon the Gentile converts, which would have compelled them to keep holy the seventh day. But the apostles and elders of the christian community at Jerusalem positively forbid it, and wrote to them, saying, “we have heard that certain who went out from us have troubled you with words subverting your souls, saying, ‘be circumcised, and *keep the law*:’ to whom we gave no such commandment.” On the contrary, “it seems good to the Holy Spirit, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things: that ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication; from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well” (Acts 15:24-29).

18. The Lord’s day is the first day of the week, or day after the seventh, and therefore sometimes styled the eighth day. It is termed his day, because it is the week-day of his resurrection. Upon this day the disciples of Christ assembled to show forth his death, and to celebrate his resurrection; which, with an enduring rest from the works of “sinful flesh,” was all the sabbatizing they practised on the Lord’s day.

19. There is no law in the scriptures requiring the nations to keep the Lord’s day in any manner whatever during his absence at the right hand of the Majesty in the heavens. So long as they continue faithless and disobedient to the gospel of the kingdom, neither nations nor individuals can present an acceptable observance of the day before the Lord; on the principle that “Jehovah is far from the wicked, whose way and sacrifice are an abomination to the Lord” (Prov. 15:8-9, 26-29): — and,

20. The Lord’s day was judaized by Constantine, the man-child of sin (Rev. 12:2-5), and his clergy. His present representative is the Italian high priest of papal christendom. When his power, and that of his kings, is finally destroyed in “the burning flame;” when Israel is engrafted into their own olive again, and the nations are subdued to the glorious sceptre of the king of saints — then will the Lord’s day become the holy sabbath, “blessed and sanctified” of God instead of the shadowy seventh day, which was merely “a sign” of the things which will then have come to pass.

### **THE FORMATION OF MAN.**

“Out of the ground wast thou taken; for dust thou art.”

That “the sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath,” is

a truth of general application to all the institutions of God. Upon this principle, man was not made for religion, but religion was made for him. If this be true, then it follows that it was adapted to man as God had formed him. Hence, the institutions of religion, if it be of God, will always be found in harmony with his constitution, and not at variance with it. They are devised as a remedy for certain irregularities which have invaded his intellectual and moral nature, by which, phenomena have been superinduced which are destructive of his being. Now the exact adaptation of the bible religion to the curative indications suggested by the intellectual, moral, and physical infirmities of human nature, which every one who understands it cannot fail to perceive, — proves that the mind which framed it is divine; and that the religion of the scriptures, and the constitution of man, are the work of one and the same creator. God is truly the only wise physician, whose practice is based upon perfect knowledge; for He alone (and they to whom He hath revealed it) knows “*what is in man*” (Jn. 2:25). Hence, no incongruities are discoverable in “His way” when His method of cure is understood.

In medicine, a scientific practice is directed, and founded upon a knowledge of the structure or mechanism of the body, the motive power thereof, and of the functions which are manifested by the working of this power on its several parts. The absence of this knowledge in a professional, constitutes empiricism; and is one cause of such vast multitudes “*dying*,” as it is said, “*of the doctor*.” Being ignorant of the motive power of the living creature, they are as unsuccessful in correcting its irregularities, as a watchmaker would be in rectifying a timepiece who was ignorant of the principles and laws by which it was moved. Now this may be taken in illustration of the predicament of others who undertake the “*cure of souls*.” To treat these as “a workman that needeth not to be ashamed,” a man should be acquainted with “souls” as God hath formed and constituted them. He should know what “a living soul” is; what its condition in a healthy state; what the peculiar morbid affection under which it languishes; what the nature of the cure indicated; and what the divinely appointed means by which the indications may be infallibly fulfilled. An attempt to “cure souls” without understanding the constitution of man as revealed by Him who created him, is mere theological experimentalism; and as bootless, and more fatally destructive than the empiricism of the most ignorant pretenders to the healing art. What! men undertake to “cure souls,” and not know what a soul is; or to imagine it a something, which it is admitted, cannot be demonstrated by “the testimony of God.” This is like pretending to repair a timepiece without knowing what constitutes a watch or clock, or while imagining it

to be a musical box, or any other conceivable thing.

Speculation has assumed that the soul is something in the human body capable of living out of the body, and of eating, drinking, feeling, tasting, smelling, thinking, singing, and so forth; and of the same essence as God Himself. In times past some have busied themselves in calculating how many such souls could stand on the point of a needle; a problem, however, which still remains unsolved. A vast deal is said in “sermons” and systems about this idea; about its supposed nature, its wonderful capacity, its infinite value, its immortality, and its destiny. I shall not, however, trouble the reader with it. We have to do with “the law and the testimony;” and as they are altogether silent about such a supposed existence, we shall not occupy our pages in superadding to the obsolete print concerning its attributes, which has already merged into the oblivion of the past. I allude to so much as this, because it is made the foundation cornerstone, as it were, of those experimental systems of spiritual cure, which are so popular with the world, and so utterly exclusive and proscriptive of the divine method.

Upon the supposition of the existence of this kind of a soul in the human body, are based the current notions of heaven, hell, immortality, infant salvation, purgatory, saint-worship, Mariolatry, spiritual milleniumism, metempsychosis, &c., &c. Its existence both in the body and out of the body being assumed, it is assumed also to be immortal. An immortal, disembodied existence requires a dwelling place, because something must be somewhere; and, as it is said to be virtuous or vicious according to its supposed life in the body, and *post mortem* rewards and punishments are affirmed — this dwelling-place is exhibited as an elysium, or, as an orthodox poet sings, “a place of goblins damn’d.” To deter men from crime, and to move them to “get religion” that their souls may be cured of sin, frightful pictures are painted, sometimes on canvas, sometimes on the imagination, and sometimes sculptured on stones, of the crackling and sulphurous flames, hideous devils, and horrid shapes, which fill the Tartarian habitation of the immortal ghosts of wicked men. This destiny of condemned ghosts was a part of the “vain philosophy” of the Greeks and Romans before the advent of Christ. It was introduced into the churches of the saints soon after “God granted repentance to the Gentiles” (Acts 11:18). But, as the apostles taught the resurrection of the mortal body (Rom. 8:11; 1Cor. 15:42-54) the dogmatism of the Greeks was variously modified. Some admitted the resurrection of the dead; but, as it interfered with their hypothesis about souls, they said it was already past (2Tim. 2:18); and consequently, that “there is no resurrection of the dead” (1Cor. 15:12). This gentilizing the hope of the gospel filled Paul with zeal,

and caused him to pen the fifteenth chapter of his first letter to the Corinthians to counteract its pernicious influence. He wrote to Timothy to put him on his guard against it; and styles the gentilisms, “profane vain babblings; and oppositions of science falsely so called” (1Tim. 6:20). He exhorts him to shun them, and “not to strive about words to no profit;” for they “*would eat as doth a canker*” (2Tim. 2:14, 16-17).

If there were no other evidence in Paul’s writings of inspiration, this prediction would be sufficient to establish it. It has come to pass exactly as he foretold it. The dogma of an immortal soul in mortal sinful flesh has eaten out the marrow and fatness, the flesh and sinew, of the doctrine of Christ; and has left behind only an ill-conditioned and ulcerated skeleton of christianity, whose dry bones rattle in the “winds of doctrine” that are blowing around us, chopping and changing to every point of the compass. The apostles taught two resurrections of the dead; one at “the manifestation of his presence” — *επιφανεια της παρουσιας αυτου* — *EPIPHANEIA tees parousias hautou* (1Thes. 4:14-17; 2Thes. 1:7-8; 2:8); the other, at the delivering up of the kingdom to God at the end (Rev. 20:5; 1Cor. 15:24) of the dispensation of the fulness of times. But this did not suit the theory of the dogmatists. They resolved the first into what they term “a glorious resurrection of spiritual life in the soul;” and the second, into a re-union of disembodied ghosts with their old mortalities to be sent back whence they came. In this way they reduce the second resurrection to a very useless and superfluous affair. Their systems send “souls” to their account as soon as death strikes the bodies down. Some torment them in purgatory, or in an intermediate state; others send them direct into unmitigated punishment; while both, after they have suffered for thousands of years before trial and conviction, re-unite them to their bodies; and if it be asked for what purpose? system replies, “to be judged!” Punish souls first and judge them after! This is truly human, but it is certainly not divine justice. The truth is, that this article of the creed is brought in to defend “orthodoxy” against the imputation of denying the resurrection of the body, which would be a very inconvenient charge in the face of the testimony of God. But this will not avail; for, to believe dogmas that make the resurrection of the mortal body unnecessary and absurd is equivalent to a denial of it. In saying that there was no future resurrection, Paul charged the Corinthians with the mortal sin of repudiating the resurrection of Jesus; “for,” said he, “if the dead rise not,” as ye say, “then Christ is not raised.” Their heresy eat out this truth, which stands or falls with the reality of the “*first* resurrection” at his coming (1Cor. 15:23).

The question of “infant salvation” and “non-elect infant damnation,” also rests upon the dogma before us. “Orthodoxy” sends some infants to

hell and some to heaven; though many “orthodox” persons are getting heartily ashamed of this part of the creed. The apprehension of the damnation of their “immortal souls” on account of “original sin,” has given rise to the Romish conceit of the rhanthismal regeneration of infants by the Holy Spirit in the scattering of a few drops of water upon the face, and the use of a certain form of words. This has been recently declared to be regenerative of infant souls by an English court of law! This question is actually gravely discussed by bishops, priests, lawyers, and ministers, in the year of grace 1849! So true is it that “great men are not always wise; neither do the aged understand judgment” (Job 32:9).

As far as the infant is itself concerned this Romish ceremony is of no importance, for it does it neither good nor harm. In one sense, however, the subject of “the ordinance” is deeply injured. He is indoctrinated by system into the notion that he was truly baptized when rhanthismally “regenerated;” and, therefore, when he is grown he troubles himself no more about the matter. Alas, what havoc, the apostasy has made with the doctrine of Christ! Believers’ baptism transmuted into rhanthizing an unconscious babe for the regeneration of its “immortal soul!” Would such a thing ever have been thought of but for the Nicolaitan “oppositions of science,” “which,” says the Lord Jesus, “I hate?” (Rev. 2:6, 15). I trow not.

How important then it is that we should have a scriptural understanding of the constitution of man. If it should appear by an exposition of the truth, that there is no such kind of soul in the universe as that conceived by the pagan Greeks and Romans, and gentilized into the doctrine of the apostles by contemporary perverters (Gal. 1:7-9) of the gospel, the faith and hope of which it hath ulcerously consumed — and handed down to us by “orthodox divines” — and fondled in these times as an essential ingredient of a true faith: — what becomes of the “cure of souls” by the dogmatical specifics of the day? They are resolved into theological empiricism, which is destined to recede like darkness before the orient brightness of the rising truth.

Let us then endeavour to understand ourselves as God has revealed our nature in His word. On the sixth day, the Elohim gave the word, saying, “Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.” In this word was life, spirit, or energy. “It was God. All things were made by it, and without it was not any thing made that was made” (Jn. 1:1-5). Hence, says Elihu, “the *Spirit* of God hath made me, and the *breath* of the Almighty hath given me *life*” (Job 33:4); or, as Moses testifies, “the Lord God formed man, the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of lives; and *man* became a LIVING SOUL” (Gen. 2:7).

Now, if it be asked, what do the scriptures define “a living soul” to be? — the answer is, a living natural, or animal, body, whether of birds, beasts, fish, or men. The phrase living creature is the exact synonym of living soul. The Hebrew words *nephesh chayiah* are the signs of the ideas expressed by Moses. *Nephesh* signifies *creature*, also *life*, *soul*, or *breathing frame* from the verb *to breathe*: *chayiah* is *of life* — a noun from the verb *to live*. *Nephesh chayiah* is the *genus* which includes all *species* of living creatures; namely, *Adam* man, *beme* beast of the field, *chitu* wild beast, *remesh* reptile, and *ouph* fowl, &c. In the common version of the scriptures, it is rendered *living soul*; so that under this form of expression the scriptures speak of “all flesh” which breathes in air, earth, and sea.

Writing about *body*, the apostle says, “there is a *natural body*, and there is a *spiritual body*.” But, he does not content himself with simply declaring this truth; he goes further, and proves it by quoting the words of Moses, saying, “for so it is written, the first man Adam was made into a *living soul* — *εις ψυχην ζωσαν*,” and then adds, “the last Adam into a *spirit* giving life, *εις πνευμα ζωοποιουν*” (1Cor. 15:44-45). Hence, in another place, speaking of the latter, he says of him, “now the Lord is the spirit — *ο δε κυριος το πνευμα εστιν*. And we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are changed into his image from glory into glory, as by *the Lord the Spirit* — *απο κυριου πνευματος* (2Cor. 3:17-18).

The proof of the apostle’s proposition that there is a *natural body* as distinct from a *spiritual body*, lies in the testimony, that “Adam was made into a *living soul*,” showing that he considered a natural, or animal body, and a living soul, as one and the same thing. If he did not, then there was no proof in the quotation, of what he affirmed.

A man then is a body of life in the sense of his being an animal, or living creature — *nephesh chayiah adam*. As a natural man, he has no other pre-eminence over the creatures God made, than what his peculiar organization confers upon him. Moses makes no distinction between him and them; for he styles them all living souls, breathing the breath of lives. Thus, literally rendered he says, “the Elohim said, the waters shall produce abundantly *sheretz chayiah nephesh* the *reptile living soul*,” and again, “*kal nephesh chayiah erameshat* every living soul creeping.” In another verse, “let the earth bring forth *nephesh chayiah* the living soul after its kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth, &c;” and “*lekol rumesh ol earetz asher bu nephesh chayiah* to every thing creeping upon the earth which (has) in it living breath” (Gen. 1:20-21, 24, 30), that is, breath of lives. And lastly, “whatsoever Adam called *nephesh chayiah* the living soul that was the name thereof” (Gen. 2:19).

Quadrupeds and men, however, are not only “living souls,” but they are vivified by the same breath and spirit. In proof of this, I remark first, that the phrase “*breath of life*” in the text of the common version is *neshemet chayim* in the Hebrew; and that, as *chayim* is in the plural, it should be rendered *breath of lives*. Secondly, this *neshemet chayim* is said to be in the inferior creatures as well as in man. Thus, God said, “I bring a flood of waters upon the earth to destroy *all flesh*, wherein is *ruach chayim* spirit of lives” (Gen. 6:17). And in another place, “they went in to Noah into the ark, two and two of *all flesh*, in which is *ruach chayim* spirit of lives.” “And *all flesh* died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing, and every man; all in whose nostrils was *neshemet ruach chayim*, BREATH OF SPIRIT OF LIVES” (Gen. 7:15, 21). Now, as I have said, it was the *neshemet chayim* with which Moses testifies God inflated the nostrils of Adam; if, therefore, this were *divina particula aurae*, a particle of the divine essence, as it is affirmed, which became the “immortal soul” in man, then all other animals have “immortal souls” likewise; for they all received “breath of spirit of lives” in common with man.

From these testimonies, I think, it must be obvious to the most unlearned, that the argument for the existence of an “immortal soul” in “sinful flesh,” hereditarily derived from the first sinner, predicated on the inspiration of his nostrils with “*the breath of lives*” by the Lord God, and the consequent application to him of the phrase “*living soul*,” if admitted as good logic, proves too much, and therefore nothing to the purpose. For if man be proved to be immortal in this sense, and upon such premises as these, then all quadrupeds are similarly immortal; which none, I suppose, but believers in the transmigration of souls, would be disposed to admit.

The original condition of the animal world was “*very good*.” Unperverted by the introduction of evil, all its constituents fulfilled the purposes of their existence. Begotten of the same power, and formed from the substance of a common mother, they were all animated by the same spirit, and lived in peace and harmony together. Formed to be *living breathing frames*, though of different species, in God they lived, and moved, and had their continued being; and displayed His wisdom, power, and handywork.

But, to return to the philology of our subject, I remark that by a metonymy, or figure of speech in which the container is put for the thing contained, and *vice versa*, *nephesh* “*breathing frame*,” is put for *neshemet ruach chayim*, which, when in motion, the frame respires. Hence *nephesh* signifies “life,” also “breath” and “soul” — *Life* or those mutually affective, positive and negative principles in all living creatures, whose

closed circuits cause motion of and in their frames. These principles, or qualities, perhaps, of the same thing, are styled by Moses *Ruach Elohim* (Gen. 1:2), or Spirit of Him “who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see” (1Tim. 6:16), and which, when the word was spoken by “the Holy Gods” (Dan. 4:8), first caused a motion upon the waters, and afterwards disengaged the light, evolved the expanse, aggregated the waters, produced vegetation, manifested the celestial universe, vitalized the breathing frames of the dry land, expanse, and seas; and formed man in *their* image and likeness. This *ruach*, or spirit, is neither the Uncreated One who dwells in light, the Lord God, nor the Elohim, His co-workers, who co-operated in the elaboration of the natural world. It was the *instrumental principle* by which they executed the commission of the glorious INCREASE to erect this earthly house, and furnish it with living souls of every species.

It is this *ruach*, or instrumentally formative power, together with the *neshemeh* or breath, which keeps them all from perishing, or returning to the dust. Thus, “if God set His heart against man, He will withdraw to Himself *ruachu veneshemetu*, i.e., *His spirit and His breath*; all flesh shall perish together, and man shall turn again to dust” (Job 34:14). In another place, “by the *neshemet el*, or *breath of God*, frost is given” (Job 37:10). Speaking of reptiles and beasts, David saith, “Thou withdrawest *ruachem*, i.e., *their spirit* — they die; and to their dust they return. Thou sendest forth *ruhech*, i.e., *Thy spirit* — they are created” (Psa. 104:30). And again, “whither shall I fly, *meruhech*, from Thy spirit” (Psa. 139:7).

From these testimonies it is manifest, that the *ruach* or spirit is all pervading. It is in heaven, in sheol, or the dust of the deepest hollow, in the uttermost depths of the sea, in the darkness, in the light, and in all things animate, and without life. It is an *universal* principle in the broadest, or rather, in an illimitable sense. It is the substratum of all motion, whether manifested in the diurnal and ellipsoidal revolutions of the planets, in the flux and reflux of the sea, in the storms and tempests of the expanse, or in the organism of reptiles, cattle, beasts, fish, fowls, vegetables, or men. The atmosphere expanse is charged with it; but it is not the air: plants and animals of all species breathe it; but it is not their breath: yet without it, though filled with air, they would die.

The atmosphere, which extends some forty-five miles in altitude, and encircles the globe, is styled the expanse, by Moses; and the breath of God, in Job. It is a compound body, consisting when pure of nitrogen and oxygen, in the proportion of 79 of the former to 21 of the latter, in 100 parts. These are considered as simple bodies, because they have not yet

been decomposed; though it is probable they have a base, which may be the *ruach*. This may exist free or combined with the elementary constituents of the *neshemeh*. Uncombined, it is that wonderful fluid, whose explosions are heard in the thunder, whose fiery bolts overthrow the loftiest towers, and rive the sturdy monarch of the woods; and in less intensity gives polarity to light, the needle, and the brain. These three together, the oxygen, nitrogen, and electricity, constitute "*the breath*" and "*spirit*" of the lives of all God's living souls.

Thus, from the centre of the earth, and extending throughout all space in every direction, is the *Ruach Elohim*, the existence of which is demonstrable from the phenomena of the natural system of things. It penetrates where the *neshemet el*, or atmospheric air, cannot. When speaking, however, of the motivity and sustentation of organized dust, or souls, they are co-existent within them. In this case, the *ruach Elohim* becomes the *ruach chayim*, or "spirit of lives;" and the *neshemet el*, the *neshemet chayim*, or "breath of lives;" and both combined in the elaboration and support of life, the *neshemet ruach chayim*, or "breath of the spirit of lives." Living creatures, or souls, are not animated, as physiologists and speculative "divines" erroneously imagine, by "*a vital principle*," capable of disembodied existence as the ghost of a man, or the transmigrating spectres of other animal species; — ghostly things, the laws and functions of which in the animal economy physiologists are unable to discover; and theologists are non-plussed to prove the existence of from the word of God. On the contrary, "*souls*" are "*made living*" by the coetaneous operation of the *ruach chayim* and the *neshemet chayim* upon their organized tissues according to certain fixed laws. When the as yet occult laws of the all-pervading *ruach*, or spirit, shall be known, this subject will be understood; and men will then be as astonished at the ignorance of the "divines," and physiologists of this "cloudy and dark day," respecting "living souls," as we are at the notion of the ancients, that their "immortal gods" resided in the stocks and stones they so stupidly adored. This, however, is quite as reasonable a theory as that of "immortal souls" dwelling in the sinners of Adam's race.

The *ruach chayim* and *neshemet chayim* are lent to the creatures of the natural world for the appointed period of their living existence. But, though lent to them, they are still God's breath, and God's spirit; nevertheless, to distinguish them from the expanse of air and spirit in their totality, they are sometimes styled, "the spirit of man," and "the spirit of the beast;" or collectively, "the spirits of all flesh," and "*their breath*." Thus it is written, "they have all *one ruach*, or spirit; so that man hath no pre-eminence over a beast; for all is vanity or vapour." "All go to one

place; all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again” (Ecc. 3:19-20). And in the sense of supplying to every living creature, or soul, “spirit” and “breath,” Jehovah is styled by Moses, “God of the *spirits* of *all flesh*” (Num. 27:16).

Besides the *ruach* and *neshemeh* without, there are certain elementary principles, in a state of combination, within all living souls, which are related to them by fixed and appropriate laws, for the manifestation of living actions. The light to the eye, and the eye to the light; so also, the breath and the spirit of God to the constituents of blood, and the blood to them. These, acting and re-acting upon each other in the lungs of all breathing frames, cause that motion throughout their structure which is termed *life*. The following testimonies will throw some light upon this part of our subject.

“Flesh, *be-nephesh-u*, with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.” This teaches that blood is the *nephesh*, or life of the flesh; hence it continues, “and surely your blood, *lah-nephesh-tikam*, for your lives will I require” (Gen. 9:5). We often find life put for blood, and blood for life, as elsewhere in the context. “Be sure that thou eat not the blood, for the blood is the *nephesh*, or life; and thou mayest not eat the life, *nephesh*, with the flesh” (Deu. 12:23). But, to this it might be objected, that if the blood be the life, then so long as it is in the body it ought to live; on the contrary it dies with the blood in it. True. Moses, however, does not teach the dogma of an *abstract vital principle*; but life, the result and consequence of the decomposition and re-combination of the elements of certain compounds. The blood abstractly considered is not life; yet relatively, it is “the life of the flesh.” The following testimony will show the sense in which the phrase “the blood is the life” is used. “I will set My face against that soul that eateth blood. For the life of the flesh is *IN the blood itself*. I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for *nephesh-tikem* your lives: for it is the blood that atones *be-nephesh* for the soul” or life. “Whosoever catcheth any fowl that may be eaten, he shall even pour out the blood thereof, and *cover it with dust*. For it is the life of *all flesh*; the blood of it is *for the life* thereof. Ye shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh; for the life of all flesh is the blood thereof” (Lev. 17:11-14). Nothing can be plainer than this.

There are three kinds of living manifestations, which are characterized by the *nature* of the organization, or being, through which they occur. Hence, we have *vegetable* life, *animal* life, and *incorruptible* life. The last is *immortality*; because the body through which the life is manifested being incorruptible, never wears out; so that being once put into motion by the spirit of God, *it lives for ever*. Vegetable and animal life, on the

contrary, is terminable or mortal; because the materials through which it is revealed are perishably organized. Mortality, then, is life manifested through a corruptible body; and immortality, life manifested through an incorruptible body. Hence, the necessity laid down in the saying of the apostle, "this corruptible body must put on incorruption, and this mortal put on immortality," before death can be "swallowed up in victory" (1Cor. 15:53-54). This doctrine of "life and incorruptibility" (*ζωή και αφθαρσία*) was new to the Greeks and Romans; and brought to light only through the gospel of the kingdom and name of Jesus Christ. It was to them foolishness; and is to the moderns incredible, because they understand not the glad tidings of the age to come.

Incorruptible life might with equal propriety be styled *spiritual life* as indicative of that with which spiritual bodies are endowed. But, here I use not the word spiritual, lest it should be confounded with that intellectual and moral life a man possesses when the "incorruptible seed" of the kingdom takes root in his heart; and when, in "the obedience of faith," he passes from under the sentence of death to the sentence of justification unto life eternal. But, at present, we have to do with animal or natural life, which is all the life the fleshly sons of the first Adam can boast of. Enough, however, I think, has been advanced to show the scriptural import of the text already quoted, that "the Lord God formed man, the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of lives; and man became a living soul." The simple, obvious, and undogmatic meaning of this, is, that the dust was first formed into "*clay*," which was then modelled by Jehovah Elohim into the form of the soul called "man," as a potter shapes the substance of his vessels. Thus, Elihu said to Job, "*I also am formed out of the clay*" (Job 33:6); and again, "*we are the clay, and Thou our potter; and we all are the work of Thy hand*" (Isa. 64:8). The fashioning of the clay being accomplished in all its component parts, which in the aggregate constitute man; that is, the dust being animalized, and then organized, the next thing was to set all the parts of this exquisite mechanism into motion. This was effected by the inrush of the air through his nostrils into his lungs according to the natural laws. This phenomenon was the *neshemet el*, or "breath of God," breathing into him; and as it was the pabulum of life to all creatures formed from the dust, it is very expressively styled "the breath of *lives*" in the plural number. Some imagine that Jehovah Elohim placed His mouth to the nostrils of the as yet clay-cold man-soul prostrate before Him, and so breathed into them. Be this as it may; of this, however, we are without doubt, that God breathes into every man at his birth the breath of lives to this day; and I see no scriptural reason why we should deny that He breathed it into Adam as He hath done into the nostrils of his

posterity, namely, by the operation of the natural, or pneumatic, laws. Hitherto, man, though a soul formed from the ground, had been *inanimate*; but, as soon as he began to respire, like the embryo passing from foetal to infant life, he “became a *living* soul,” not an *everliving*, but simply *nephesh chayiah*, a living breathing frame, or *body of life*.

## MAN IN THE IMAGE AND LIKENESS OF THE ELOHIM.

“Thou hast made him a little lower than the angels.”

Men and beasts, say the scriptures, “have all one *ruach* or spirit; so that a man hath no pre-eminence above a beast.” The reason assigned for this equality is the *oneness of their spirit*, which is proved by the fact of their common destiny; as it is written, “for all are vanity:” that is, “all go unto one place; all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again.” Yet this one spirit manifests its tendencies differently in men and other creatures. In the former, it is aspiring and God-defying, rejoicing in its own works, and devoted to the vanity of the passing hour; while in the latter, its disposition is grovelling to the earth in all things. Thus, the heart of man being “deceitful above all things and desperately wicked, who can know or fathom it” — Solomon was led to exclaim, “who knoweth the spirit of the sons of Adam, *ruach beni headam*, which exalts itself to the highest, and the spirit of a beast which inclines to the earth?” (Ecc. 3:19-21). We may answer, “none, but God only;” He knoweth what is in man, and needs not that any should testify of him (Jn. 2:25).

But, from this testimony some one might infer that, as man was made only “a *little lower* than the angels,” and yet has “no pre-eminence over a beast,” the beast also is but a little lower than the angels. This, however, would be a very erroneous conclusion. The equality of men and other animals consists in the *kind of life* they possess in common with each other. Vanity, or mortality, is all that pertains to any kind of living flesh. The whole animal world has been made subject to it; and as it affects all living souls alike, bringing them back to the dust again, no one species can claim pre-eminence over the other; for “one thing befalleth them; as the one dieth, so dieth the other.”

Man, however, differs from other creatures in having been modelled after a divine type, or pattern. In *form* and *capacity* he was made like to the angels, though in *nature* inferior to them. This appears from the testimony that he was made “in their image, after their likeness,” and “a *little lower* than the angels,” or Elohim (Psa. 8:5). I say, he was made in the image of the angels, as the interpretation of the co-operative

imperative, "let *us* make man in *our* image, after *our* likeness." The work of the six days, though elaborated by the power of Him "who dwelleth in the light," was executed by "His angels, that excel in strength, and do His commandments, hearkening unto the voice of His word" (Psa. 103:20). These are styled Elohim, or "gods," in numerous passages. David says, "worship Him all *ye gods*" (Psa. 97:7); which Paul applies to Jesus, saying, "let all *the angels* of God worship him" (Heb. 1:6). Man, then, was made after the image and likeness of Elohim, but for a while inferior in nature. But the race will not always be inferior in this respect. It is designed to advance to a higher nature; not all the individuals of it; but those of the race "who shall be accounted worthy to obtain that age (*αιων μελλων*, the future age) and the resurrection from among the dead (*εκ νεκρων*) ... who can die no more: for they are equal to the angels (*ισαγγελοι*); and are the sons of God, being the sons of the resurrection" (Lk. 20:35-36).

The import of the phrase "in the image, after the likeness" is suggested by the testimony, that "Adam begat a son in his own likeness, after his image, and called his name Seth" (Gen. 5:3). In this respect, Seth stands related to Adam, as Adam did to the Elohim; but differing in this, that the nature of Adam and Seth were identical; whereas that of Adam and the Elohim were dissimilar. Would any one be at a loss to know the meaning of Seth's being in the image of his father? The very same thing is meant by Adam being in the image of the Elohim. An image is the representation of some *form* or shape; metaphorically, it may signify the exact resemblance of one character to another. But, in the case before us, the parties had no characters at the time of their birth. They were simply innocent of actual transgression; no scope having been afforded them to develop character. The Elohim, however, were personages of dignity and holiness, as well as of incorruptible, or spiritual, nature. The resemblance, therefore, of Adam to the Elohim as their image was of *bodily form*, not of intellectual and moral attainment; and this I apprehend to be the reason why the Elohim are styled "*men*" when their visits to the sons of Adam are recorded in the scriptures of truth. In shape, Seth was like Adam, Adam like the Elohim, and the Elohim, the image of the invisible Increate; the great and glorious archetype of the intelligent universe.

Seth was also "in Adam's own likeness." While *image*, then, hath reference to form or shape, "*likeness*" hath regard to mental constitution, or *capacity*. From the shape of his head as compared with other creatures, it is evident, that man has a mental capacity which distinguishes him above them all. Their *likeness* to him is faint. They can think; but their thoughts are only sensual. They have no moral sentiments, or high

intellectual aspirations; but are grovelling in all their instincts, which incline only to the earth. In proportion as their heads assume the human form in the same ratio do they excel each other in sagacity; and, as in the monkey tribe, display a greater likeness to man. But, let the case be reversed; let the human head degenerate from the godlike perfection of the Elohim, the standard of beauty in shape and feature; let it diverge to the image of an ape's, and the human animal no longer presents the image and likeness of the Elohim; but rather, the chattering imbecility of the creature most resembling it in form. Adam's mental capacity enabled him to comprehend and receive spiritual ideas, which moved him to veneration, hope, conscientiousness, the expression of his views, affections, and so forth. Seth was capable of the like display of intellectual and moral phenomena; and of an assimilation of character to that of his father. He was therefore in the likeness as well as in the image of Adam; and, in the same sense, they were both "after the likeness of the Elohim."

But, though Adam was "made in the image and after the likeness" of the "Holy Ones," the similitude has been so greatly marred, that his posterity present but a faint representation of either. The almost uncontrolled and continuous operation of "the law of sin and death" (Rom. 7:23), styled by philosophers "the law of nature," which is an indwelling and inseparable constituent of our present economy, has exceedingly deformed the image, and effaced the likeness of God, which man originally presented. It required, therefore, the appearance of a New Man, in whom the image and likeness should re-appear, as in the beginning. This was "the man Christ Jesus," whom Paul styles "the last Adam." He is "the *Image* of the invisible God" (Col. 1:15) (*εικων του θεου*); "the effulgent mirror of the glory, and exact likeness of His person" (Heb. 1:3) (*απαυγασμα της δοξης και χαρακτηρ της υποστασεως αυτου*). Hence, in another place, Paul says, he was "in the *form* of God" (Phil. 2:6-8) (*εν μορφη θεου*), and also "made in the likeness of men, and in the form of a man." Being thus the image and likeness of the invisible God, as well as of man, who was created in the image and likeness of the Elohim, he made himself equal with God in claiming God for his father (Jn. 5:18), though born of "sinful flesh." Though thus highly related in paternity, image, and character, he was yet "made a little lower than the angels;" for he appeared not in the higher nature of Elohim, but in the inferior nature of the seed of Abraham (Heb. 2:16). This was the first stage of his manifestation, as the present is of the saints who are his brethren. But he is the appointed "heir of all things, on account of whom" (*δι ου*), "the dispensations were re-arranged (*κατηρτισθαι τους αιωνας*) by the word of God, to the end that the things seen exist not from things

apparent" (Heb. 1:2; 11:3). But, says the apostle, "we do not yet see all things put under him: but we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels *for the suffering of death*, crowned with glory and honour; that by the grace of God he should taste death for every man" (Heb. 2:8-9). Having been thus laid low, and for this gracious purpose, he is no longer "lower than the angels." He is equal to them in body; and made so much superior to them in rank, dignity, honour, and glory, "as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they" (Heb. 1:4).

In Jesus, then, raised from the dead incorruptible, and clothed with brightness as when he was transfigured upon the Holy Mount (Matt. 17:2), we behold the image and likeness of the invisible God. When we contemplate him by faith, as we shall hereafter by sight we see A MIRROR from which the glory of Jehovah is reflected in intellectual, moral, and physical grandeur. He that would know God must behold Him in Christ. If he be acquainted with him as he is portrayed in the prophets and apostles, he will understand the character of God, whom no man hath seen, nor can see; who chargeth His angels with folly, and before whom the heavens are not clean. Jesus was the true light shining in the darkness of Judea, whose inhabitants "comprehended it not." Through him, God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, shone into the hearts of as many as received him, to give them the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ; that so they might receive power to become the sons of God, believing on His name (2Cor. 3:18; 4:6; Jn. 1:5, 12).

How consoling and cheering is it, then, amid all the evils of the present state, that God hath found a ransom, who is willing and able to deliver us from the power of the grave; and not only so, but that "at the manifestation of the sons of God" (Rom. 8:17-25), when he shall appear in power and great glory, "*we shall be like him*; because we shall see him as he is" (1Jn. 3:2). Then will the saints be "changed into the same image from glory," now only a matter of hope, "into glory," as seen and actually possessed, "even as the Lord" himself was changed, when he became "the spirit giving life," or "a quickening spirit."

### **THE SPIRITUAL BODY.**

"There is a spiritual body."

The subject of this section is the second member of the apostle's proposition, that "there is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body." It is contained in his reply to some of the Corinthian disciples, who, to their shame, had not the knowledge of God, and therefore foolishly inquired,

“How are the dead raised up? and with *what body* do they come?” He showed them that the *animal body* had a similar relation to the *spiritual body* that *naked grain* has to the *plant* produced from it according to the law of its reproduction. He explained, that before a plant could be reproduced from a seed, the seed must be put into the soil, and die, or decay away. By the time the plant is established, all vestige of the seed is gone from the root; yet, the identity of the seed with the plant is not lost, inasmuch as the same kind of seed re-appears in the fruit of the plant. The plant is the secondary body of the seed-body, which is the first. There are different kinds of vegetable seed-bodies; and also of animal seed-bodies. These classes of seeds are terrestrial bodies, and have their glory in the bodies produced from them. But there are also celestial bodies, whose glory is of a different character. It is light blazing and sparkling in the vault of heaven, as may be seen by every eye. Such is the apostle’s illustration of the resurrection of the dead; or, of how they are raised, and for what kind of body they sprung forth. “So also,” says he, “is the resurrection of the dead.” We are in this state as the naked grain. We die and are buried, and go to corruption; leaving only our characters behind us written in the book of God. When decayed, a little dust alone remains, as the nucleus of our future selves. When the time comes for the righteous dead to rise, then “He that raised up Christ from the dead will also make alive their mortal bodies by His spirit,” operating through Jesus upon their dust, and fashioning it into the image of the Lord from heaven (Rom. 8:11; 2Cor. 4:14). Thus, as the Elohim made man out of the dust in their own image and likeness; so, the Lord Jesus, by the same spirit, will also refashion from the dust, the righteous of the posterity of the first Adam, into his own image and likeness. This is wonderful, that by a man should come the resurrection of the dead (1Cor. 15:21). Truly may he be called the “Wonderful” (Isa. 9:6). Once a babe fondled at the breast, and hereafter the creator of myriads, now only dust and ashes, but then equal to the angels of God; and “sons of the resurrection,” of which he is himself “the First Fruits.”

Having shown “how,” or upon what principles, the righteous dead are raised, the apostle gives us to understand, that their “glory” will consist in brightness; for he cites the splendour of the celestial bodies as illustrative of their’s. This reminds us of the testimony in Daniel, that “they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever” (Dan. 12:3). This is repeated by the Lord Jesus, who says, “then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun *in the kingdom* of their father” (Matt. 13:43); which assurance Paul also revives in his letter to the saints at Philippi, saying, “our

commonwealth (*ἡμῶν το πολίτευμα*) has a beginning (Dan. 2:44; Lk. 19:12, 15) (*υπαρχει*) in the heavens, (*εὐ οὐρανοῖς*) out of which also we wait for the saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: who will transfigure the body of our humiliation, that it may become of like form with the body of his glory, by the power of that which enables him even to subdue all things to himself" (Phil. 3:20-21).

When we die we are buried, or "sown," like so many seeds in the earth. We are sown, says the apostle, "in corruption," "in dishonour," "in weakness," and with an animal nature; but, when we are raised to inherit the kingdom, we become incorruptible, glorious, powerful, and possessed of a spiritual nature, such as Jesus and the Elohim rejoice in. Now, a spiritual body is as material, or substantial and tangible, a body as that which we now possess. It is a body purified from "the law of sin and death." Hence it is termed "holy," and "spiritual," because it is born of the spirit from the dust, is incorruptible, and sustained by the *ruach*, or spirit, independently of the *neshemeh*, or atmospheric air. "That which is born of the flesh," in the ordinary way, "is flesh," or an animal body: and that which is "born of the spirit," by a resurrection to life, "*is spirit*," or a spiritual body (Jn. 3:6). Hence, in speaking of Jesus, Paul says, "born of David's seed according to the flesh; and constituted the son of God in power, by the spirit of holiness, through a resurrection from the dead" (Rom. 1:3-4). Thus, he was born of the spirit, and therefore became "a spirit;" and, because highly exalted, and possessing a name which is above every name (Phil. 2:9-11), he is styled "*the Lord* the Spirit."

That the spiritual body is independent of atmospheric air for its support, is clear from the ascension of the Lord Jesus. An animal body can only exist in water, or in atmospheric air, and at a comparatively low altitude above the surface of the earth. Now, the air does not extend beyond forty-five miles; consequently beyond that limit, if they could even attain to it, creatures supported by breath in the nostrils, could no more live than fish in the air. Beyond our atmosphere is the *ether*; through which they only can pass, who, like the Lord Jesus and the angels, possess a nature adapted to it. This is the case with the spiritual nature. Jesus was changed to *εἰς πνεῦμα* into a spirit, and was therefore enabled to pass through it to the right hand of the Majesty in the heavens. Enoch, Elijah, and Moses, are also cases to the point.

The spiritual body is constituted of flesh and bones vitalized by the spirit. This appears from the testimony concerning Jesus. On a certain occasion, he unexpectedly stood in the midst of his disciples, at which they were exceedingly alarmed, supposing they beheld a spirit, or

phantasm, as at a former time. But, that they might be assured that it was really he himself, he invited them to handle him, and examine his hands and feet: “for,” said he, “a spirit hath not flesh and bones as ye see me have.” Incredulous for joy, he gave them further proof by eating a piece of broiled fish and of a honeycomb (Lk. 24:36-43). Thomas thrust his hand into his side, and was convinced that he was the same who had been crucified (Jn. 20:27). What stronger proof can we need of the substantial and tangible nature of the spiritual body? It is the animal body purified, not evaporated into gas, or vapour. It is a bloodless body; for in the case of Jesus he had poured out his blood upon the cross. The life of the animal body is in the blood; but not so that of the spiritual body: the life of this resides in that mighty power which suspends “the earth upon nothing,” and is diffused through the immensity of space.

When the Lord Jesus said, “*a spirit* hath not flesh and bones as ye see me have,” he did not mean to say that *a spiritual body* had not; but a spirit such as they thought they saw. “They supposed they had seen a spirit.” In the received reading the same word, *pneuma*, is used here as in the text which speaks of Jesus as “the Lord the Spirit;” but, evidently, not in the same sense. Indeed, the reading in Griesbach’s edition of the original text is clearly the correct one. The word rendered spirit is properly *φαντασμα*, a phantom or mere optical illusion; and not *pneuma*, spirit. When Jesus walked upon the sea both Matthew (Matt. 14:26) and Mark (Mk. 6:49) make use of the same phrase as Luke, and say that the disciples when they saw him, “supposed they had seen a spirit, and they cried out for fear.” In both these places the word is *phantasma*, and not *pneuma*.

Having affirmed that man stands related to two kinds of body, the apostle gives us to understand, that in the arrangements of God the spiritual system of things is elaborated out of the animal, and not the animal out of the spiritual. The natural world is the raw material, as it were, of the spiritual; the bricks and mortar, so to speak, of the mansion which is to endure for ever. In relation to human nature, two men are presented as its types in the two phases it is to assume. These Paul styles “the First Adam,” and “the Last Adam,” or “the first man,” and “the second man.” The former, he terms “earthly;” because he came from the ground, and goes thither again: and, the latter, “the Lord from heaven;” because, being “known no more after the flesh,” he is expected from heaven as the place of his final manifestation in “the body of his glory.” Then, says John, “*we shall be like him.*” If, therefore, we have been successful in depicting the Lord as he is now, while seated at the right hand of God; namely, an incorruptible, honourable, powerful, living person, substantial and tangible, shining as the sun, and able to eat and

drink, and to display all mental and other phenomena in perfection: if the reader be able to comprehend such an "Image of the invisible God," he can understand what they are to be, who are accounted worthy to inherit His kingdom. Therefore, says Paul, "as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly" (1Cor. 15:49), or, Lord from heaven.

This corporeal change of those, who have first been morally "renewed by knowledge after the image of Him that hath created them" (Col. 3:10) — from "sinful flesh" into spirit, is an absolute necessity, before they can inherit the kingdom of God. When we come to understand the nature of this kingdom, which has to be exhibited in these pages, we shall see, that it is a necessity which cannot be dispensed with. "That which is corruptible cannot inherit incorruptibility," says the apostle. This is the reason why animal men must die, or be transformed. Our animal nature is corruptible; but the kingdom of God is indestructible, as the prophet testifies, saying, "it shall never be destroyed, nor left to other people; but shall stand for ever" (Dan. 2:44). Because, therefore, of the nature of this kingdom, "flesh and blood cannot inherit it;" and hence the necessity of a man being "born of the spirit," or he cannot enter into the kingdom of God" (Jn. 3:5-6; 1Cor. 15:50). He must be "changed into spirit," put on incorruptibility and immortality of body, or he will be physically incapable of retaining the honor, glory, and power of the kingdom for ever, or even for a thousand years.

But, before the apostle concludes his interesting exposition of "the kind of body for which the dead come," he makes known a secret which was previously concealed from the disciples at Corinth. It would probably have occurred to them, that, if flesh and blood could not inherit the kingdom of God, then those who were living at the epoch of its establishment, being men in the flesh, could have no part in it. But to remove this difficulty, the apostle wrote, saying, "Behold, I tell you a secret (*μυστηριον*). We shall not all sleep, (*κοιμηθησομεθα μετ*. to die, be dead), but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet; for it (the seventh trumpet — Rev. 11:15, 18; 15:8; 20:4) shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible (*ισαγγελιοι* equal to the angels — Lk. 20:36), and we shall be changed (*εις πνευμα*, into spirit — 1Cor. 15:45). For this corruptible (body) must put on incorruptibility (*αφθαρσιαν*), and this mortal (body) must put on immortality (*αθανασιαν*). Then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, "Death is swallowed up in victory" (Isa. 25:8). But, that the saints might not misapprehend the matter, especially those of them who may be contemporary with the seventh trumpet-period, he gave further

particulars of the secret in another letter. The disciples at Thessalonica were deeply sorrowing for the loss of some of their body who had fallen asleep in death; probably victims to persecution. The apostle wrote to comfort them, and exhorted them “not to sorrow as the others (*οι λοιποι* *i.e.*, the unbelievers), who have no hope. For if *we* (the disciples) believe that Jesus died and rose again;” and be not like those, who, by saying, “there is no resurrection of the dead,” in effect deny it; “even so,” as he rose, “them also who sleep in Jesus will God bring forth (*αξει*, *lead out*, or *produce*), by him” (2Cor. 4:14). He then proceeds to show the “*order*” (1Cor. 15:23) in which the saints are changed into spirit, or immortalized, by the Son of Man (Jn. 5:21, 25-26, 28-29). “For,” says he, “this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we, the living, who remain at the Lord’s coming, shall not anticipate them who are asleep. For the Lord himself shall come down from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God: and *the dead in Christ shall rise FIRST: after that* we, the living, who remain, shall be snatched away at the same time with them in clouds to a meeting of the Lord in the air: and thus we shall be with the Lord at all times. Wherefore comfort one another with these words” (1Thes. 4:13-18).

It will be seen from this, that survivors of the dead were not consoled in the first age of christianity for the loss of their friends, as they are now by those who “improve the death” of the influential among them. In “funeral sermons,” the “immortal souls” of the deceased are transported “on angels’ wings to heaven,” and the living are consoled with the assurance, that they are singing the praises of God around the throne; feasting with Abraham, and the prophets, with the saints and martyrs, and with Jesus and his apostles in the kingdom of God; and they are themselves persuaded, that the souls of their relations, now become angels, are watching over them, and praying for them; and that when they die their own souls will be re-united with them in the realms of bliss. Need I say to the man enlightened in the word, that there is no such comfort, or consolation, as this in the law and the testimony of God? Such traditions are purely mythological; and come of the Nicolaitan dogma of saved “ghosts; and goblins damn’d,” which has cancerously extirpated “the truth as it is in Jesus.” No, the apostles did not point men to the day of their death, and its immediate consequents, for comfort; nor did they administer the consolations of the gospel to any who had not obeyed it. They offered comfort only to the disciples; for they only are the heirs with Jesus of the kingdom of God. They taught these to look to the coming of Christ, and to the resurrection, as the time of a re-union with their brethren in the faith. At death, they should “rest from their labours, and their works should

follow them;” and “to them that look for him shall he appear the second time without a sin-offering unto salvation” (Heb. 9:28). Such were the practical, and intelligible “words,” with which the apostles comforted their brethren; but words which have become sealed and cabalistic, both to the unlearned and “the wise.”

In conclusion, then, as far as power is concerned, God could have created all things upon a spiritual or incorruptible basis at once. The globe could have been filled with men and women, equal to the angels in nature, power, and intellect, on the sixth day; but the world would have been without a history, and its population characterless. This, however, would not have been according to the plan. The animal must precede the spiritual as the acorn goes before the oak. This will explain many difficulties which are created by systems; and which will for ever remain inexplicable upon the hypotheses they invent. The bible has to do with things, not imaginations; with bodies, not phantasmata; with “living souls” of every species; with *corporeal* beings of other worlds; and with incorruptible and undying men: but it is mute as death, and silent as the grave, having nothing at all to say about such “souls” as men pretend to “cure;” except to repudiate them as a part of that “philosophy and vain deceit” (Col. 2:8), which some professing have erred concerning the faith” (1Tim. 6:21).

## THE FORMATION OF WOMAN.

“The woman was of the man.”

Adam, having been formed in the image, after the likeness of the Elohim on the sixth day, remained for a short time alone in the midst of the earthborns of the field. He had no companion who could reciprocate his intelligence; none who could minister to his wants, or rejoice with him in the delights of creation; and reflect the glory of his nature. The Elohim are a society, rejoicing in the love and attachment of one another; and Adam, being like them though of inferior nature, required an object, which should be calculated to evoke the latent resemblances of his similitude to theirs. It was no better for man to be alone than for them. Formed in their image, he had social feelings as well as intellectual and moral faculties, which required scope for their practical and harmonious exercise. A purely intellectual and abstractly moral society, untempered by domesticism, is an imperfect state. It may be very enlightened, very dignified and immaculate; but it would also be very formal, and frigid as the poles. A being might know all things, and he might scrupulously observe the divine law from a sense of duty; but something more is requisite to make him amiable, and beloved by either God or his fellows. This amiability the

social feelings enable him to develop; which, however, if unfurnished with a proper object, or wholesome excitation, react upon him unfavorably, and make him disagreeable. Well aware of this, the Jehovah Elohim said, “it is not good that the man should be alone. I will make him a help fit for him” (Gen. 2:18).

But previous to the formation of this help, God caused “every living soul” (*kol nephesh chayiah*) to pass in review before Adam, that he might name them. He saw that each one had its mate; “but for him there was not found a suitable companion.” It was necessary, therefore, to form one, the last and fairest of His handyworks. The Lord had created man in His own “image and glory;” but He had yet to subdivide him into two; a negative and a positive division; an active and a passive half; male and female, yet one flesh. The negatives, or females, of all other species of animals, were formed out of the ground (Gen. 2:19); and not out of the sides of their positive mates: so that the lion could not say of the lioness, “this is bone of my bone, and flesh of my flesh; therefore shall a lion leave his sire and dam, and cleave unto the same lioness for ever.” The inferior creatures are under no such law as this; as primaries, indeed, the earth is their common mother, and the Lord, the “God of all their spirits.” They have no second selves; the sexes in the beginning were from the ground direct; the female was not of the male, though the male is by her: therefore, there is no natural basis for a social, or domestic, law to them.

But, in the formation of a companion for the first man, the Lord Elohim created her upon a different principle. She was to be a dependent creature; and a sympathy was to be established between them, by which they should be attached inseparably. It would not have been fit therefore to have given her an independent origin from the dust of the ground. Had this been the case, there would have been about the same kind of attachment between men and women as subsists among the creatures below them. The woman’s companionship was designed to be intellectually and morally sympathetic with “the image and glory of God,” whom she was to revere as her superior. The sympathy of the mutually independent earthborns of the field, is purely sensual; and in proportion as generations of mankind lose their intellectual and moral likeness to the Elohim, and fall under the dominion of sensuality; so the sympathy between men and women evaporates into mere animalism. But, I say, such a degenerate result as this, was not the end of her formation. She was not simply to be “the mother of all living;” but to reflect the glory of man as he reflected the glory of God.

To give being to such a creature, it was necessary she should be formed out of man. This necessity is found in the law which pervades the flesh. If

the feeblest member of the body suffer, all the other members suffer with it; that is, pain even in the little finger will produce distress throughout the system. Bone sympathizes with bone, and flesh with flesh, in all pleasurable, healthful, and painful feelings. Hence, to separate a portion of Adam's living substance, and from it to build a woman, would be to transfer to her the sympathies of Adam's nature; and though by her organization, able to maintain an independent existence, she would never lose from her nature a sympathy with his, in all its intellectual, moral, and physical manifestations. According to this natural law, then, the Lord Elohim made woman in the likeness of the man, out of his substance. He might have formed her from his body before he became a *living* soul; but this would have defeated the law of sympathy; for, in inanimate matter there is no mental sympathy. She must, therefore, be formed from the living bone and flesh of the man. To do this was to inflict pain; for to cut out a portion of flesh would have created the same sensations in Adam as in any of his posterity. To avoid such an infliction, "the Lord God caused a *deep sleep* to fall upon Adam, and he slept." While thus unconscious of what was doing, and perfectly insensible to all corporeal impressions, the Lord "took out one of his ribs, and then closed up the flesh in its place." This was a delicate operation; and consisted in separating the rib from the breast bone and spine. But nothing is too difficult for God. The most wonderful part of the work had yet to be performed. The quivering rib, with its nerves and vessels, had to be increased in magnitude, and formed into a human figure, capable of reflecting the glory of the man. This was soon accomplished; for, on the sixth day, "male and female created He them;" and "the rib which the Lord God had taken from man, He made a woman, and brought her unto the man." And "God blessed them, and said unto them, be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish (fill again) the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that creepeth upon the earth."

Believing this portion of the testimony of God, need our faith be staggered at the resurrection of the body from the little dust that remains after its entire reduction? Surely, the Lord Jesus Christ by the same power that formed woman from a rib, and that increased a few loaves and fishes to twelve baskets of fragments after five thousand were fed and satisfied, can create multitudes of immortal men from a few proportions of their former selves: and as capable of resuming their individual identity, as was Adam's rib of reflecting his mental and physical similitude. It is blind unbelief alone that requires the continuance of some sort of existence to preserve the identity of the resurrected man with his former self. Faith confides in the ability of God to do what He has promised, although the

believer has not the knowledge of how He is to accomplish it. Believing the wonders of the past, “he staggers not at the promise of God through unbelief; but is strong in faith, giving glory to God” (Rom. 4:20).

The testimony of Moses in regard to the formation of woman, brings to light a very interesting phenomenon, which has since been amply proved to be the result of a natural law. It is, that *man may be made insensible to pain by being placed in a deep sleep*. The Lord Elohim availed Himself of this law, and subjected the man He had made to its operation; and man, because he is in His likeness, is also able to influence his fellow-man in the same way. The art of applying the law is called by various names, and may be practised variously. The name does not alter the thing. A man’s rib might be extracted now with as little inconvenience as Adam experienced, by throwing him into a deep sleep, which in numerous cases may be easily effected; but there our imitative ability ceases. We could not build up a woman from the rib. Greater wonders, however, than this will man do hereafter; for by “the *Man* Christ Jesus” will his Bride be created from the dust, in his own image after his own likeness, “to the glory of God throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.”

When the Lord God presented the newly formed creature to her parent flesh, Adam said, “this is now bone of my bone, and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called *Ishah* (or Outman), because she was taken out of *Ish*, or man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife; and they shall be one flesh” (Gen. 2:21-24). Thus, Adam pronounced upon himself the sentence that was to bind them together for weal or woe, until death should dissolve the union, and set them free for ever. This was marriage. It was based upon the great fact of her formation out of man; and consisted in Adam taking her to himself with her unconstrained consent. There was no religious ceremonial to sanctify the institution; for the Lord Himself even abstained from pronouncing the union. No human ceremony can make marriage more holy than it is in the nature of things. Superstition has made it “a sacrament,” and, inconsistently enough, denied it, though “a *holy* sacrament,” to the very priests she has appointed to administer it. But priests and superstition have no right to meddle with the matter; they only disturb the harmony, and destroy the beauty, of God’s arrangements. A declaration in the presence of the Lord Elohim, and the consent of the woman, before religion was instituted, is the only ceremonial recorded in the case. This, I believe, is the order of things among “the friends,” or nearly so; and, if all their peculiarities were as scriptural as this, there would be but little cause of complaint against them.

“Man,” says the apostle, “is the image and glory of God; but the woman is the glory of the man;” and the reason he assigns is, because “the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man” (1Cor. 11:7-9). She was not formed in the image of man, though she may have been in the image of some of the Elohim. “Man” is generic of both sexes. When, therefore, Elohim said “let us make *man* in *our* image;” and it is added, “male and female created he *them*,” it would seem that both the man and the woman were created in the image and likeness of Elohim. In this case, some of the Elohim are represented by Adam’s form, and some by Eve’s. I see no reason why it should not be so. When mankind rises from the dead, they will doubtless rise as immortal men and women; and then, says Jesus, “they are equal to the angels;” on an equality with them in every respect. Adam only was in the image of Him that created him; but then, the Elohim that do the commandments of the invisible God, are the virile portion of their community; Eve was not in their image. Their’s was restricted to Adam; nevertheless, she was after the image and likeness of some of those comprehended in the pronoun “*our*.” Be this as it may, though not in the image, she was in the likeness of Adam; and both “very good” according to the subangelic nature they possessed.

### **A GREAT MYSTERY.**

“We are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.”

In writing to the disciples at Ephesus, the apostle illustrates the submission due from wives to their husbands by the obedience rendered to Christ by the community of the faithful in his day. “As the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.” This was an injunction of absolute submission to their christian husbands as unto the Lord himself; because “the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church.” But, while he enjoins this unqualified obedience, he exhorts their husbands to return them due benevolence, not to treat them with bitterness, but to love them “even as Christ loved the church, and gave himself up *for it*.” If their wives, however, were disobedient and perverse, and chose to depart, “let them; a brother is not under bondage in such cases” (1 Cor. 7:15). They are like those who will not submit to Christ. The love which should subsist between christian brethren and sisters in the married state, is such as Christ manifested for the church by anticipation. “While *we* were yet sinners Christ died for *us*,” says the apostle (Rom. 5:6, 8). This is the greatest love a man can possibly show, that he should die for his enemies;

and this is the kind of love which Paul (who by the bye was never tried by a termagant wife) commends to the attention of the Ephesians; though always on the supposition, that the wives “adorn the hidden man of the heart with that which is incorruptible, even a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection to their own husbands: even as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord: whose daughters such women are, *as long as they do well*, and are not dismayed at any threat” (1Pet. 3:3-6).

As he had introduced the subject of matrimonial love and obedience, and had adduced the love of Christ for them all as his church, by way of illustration; he proceeds to show the object for which he loved them even unto death; the relationship which was consequently established between them; and the sacrifice which they ought cheerfully to make for him, who had loved them so devotedly. His object in giving himself for the church before it was formed, was that those who should afterwards compose it “might be sanctified and cleansed *in the laver of the water (τω λουτρῳ του υδατος)* BY *the word (εν ρηματι)*” that, at the resurrection, “he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but holy and without blemish.” “Ye are clean,” said Jesus to his disciples, “through *the word* which I have spoken to you” (Jn. 15:3). This word, which is defined to be “the law and the testimony” (Isa. 8:20), is the great instrument of holiness and purification. It changes men’s minds; loosens their attachment to earthly things; causes them to place their affection on things above; creates a new and right spirit within them; diffuses the love of God abroad in their hearts; separates them from sinners; leads them into Christ; and develops in their lives, fruit, characteristic of that repentance which needs not to be repented of. The Lord Jesus styles it, “the word of the kingdom” (Matt. 13:19); and Peter, the incorruptible seed (1Pet. 1:23); and Paul, “the word of the truth of the gospel” (Col. 1:5); and John, “God’s seed” (1Jn. 3:9); and by James it is termed, “the word of truth” (Jas. 1:18), with which the invariable and unvacillating Father of lights begets His children, that they should be “a kind of first fruits of His creatures.” It is by this word that an individual is renewed or renovated; so as, in an intellectual and moral sense, to become a “new man;” as appears from what the apostle says to the brethren at Colosse: “Ye have put on the new man, which is *renewed by knowledge* (Col. 3:10) after the image of Him that created him.” This renewing affects the spirit of the mind (Eph. 4:23-24), which may be known to be renovated, by a man having turned from his natural subserviency to “the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye, and the pride of life,” to “righteousness

and *true* holiness.” When the mental disposition called “the heart,” is renewed, it becomes a mirror, as it were, in which one skilled in the word of the kingdom, can discern the spirit, or behold a reflection of the Divine Nature. This image of God in a man’s character can only be created by the word of the truth of the gospel of the kingdom. A man may be very “pious” according to the standard of piety set up and approved by his fellow-men; but, if he be ignorant of the renewing elements, — if he neither know nor understand, and consequently, and necessarily, be faithless of the law and testimony of God, “there is no light in him.” He is walking in a vain show; “in the vanity of his mind, having his understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God *through the ignorance that is in him*, because of the blindness of his heart” (Eph. 4:18). The law and the testimony are styled by Peter, “God’s knowledge;” “whereby are given unto us *exceeding great and precious promises*: that BY THESE,” i.e., by the understanding and belief of these, “ye might be partakers of the Divine Nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust” (2Pet. 1:2-4). Now, the “testimony of God” came by the Holy Spirit, by which God testified in His prophets (Neh. 9:30); and, in the last days, spoke through His son (Heb. 1:1-2; Jn. 3:34; 5:47; 6:63; 7:16; 12:48-49) and the apostles (Matt. 10:19-20). Hence, the effects of the word believed are attributed to the spirit; and because the word sets men to breathing in God’s moral atmosphere, it is termed “spirit and life.” These remarks will explain the saying of the apostle to Titus, “according to His mercy God saved us through the laver of regeneration, and *renewal of the Holy Spirit*” (Tit. 3:5). This is parallel to the saying, “sanctified and cleansed in the laver of the water *by the word*,” for the reader must not suppose, that any man, woman, or child, can be regenerated, or born again, by being plunged into a bath, who is ignorant of the word. The Holy Spirit does not renew the heart of man as He renews the mortal body, when through Jesus He raises it from the dead. In this case, the power is purely physical. But, when the heart is the subject of renewal, it is by the knowledge of the written testimony of God, or the word. “God,” says Peter, speaking of the gentile believers, “purified their hearts by faith” (Acts 15:9); and Paul prays, “that Christ may dwell in their hearts by faith” (Eph. 3:17). Now, faith comes by hearing the word of God (Rom. 10:17); in other words, it is the belief of God’s testimony concerning things to come, which are not seen (Heb. 11:1); and without which, it is impossible to please Him (Heb. 11:6). When a man is renewed by the truth, he is renewed by the spirit, and not before. There is no such thing in the scriptures as a renewed ignorant man. Ignorance of the testimony of God, and regeneration, are utterly incompatible. The truth is the purifier to those only who understand and

obey it (1Pet. 1:22); and there is no moral purity, or sanctification of spirit before God, without it. It is only believers of the truth, then, who can be the subjects of a regeneration by being submerged “in the laver of the water.” When they come out of this, they have been “washed, sanctified, and justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, by the spirit of God” (1Cor. 6:11).

The truth to be believed is the gospel of the kingdom and name of Jesus Christ (Acts 8:12). When this is understood, and heartily received, it produces a *disposition of mind*, such as was in Abraham and Jesus, and which is called repentance. Believers, so disposed, are the begotten of God, and have become as little children. They believe “the exceeding great and precious promises,” together with the things testified concerning the sufferings and resurrection of Jesus. He fell into a *deep sleep*; and, while thus unconscious and insensible, his side was opened by a spear, and forthwith rushed blood and water (Jn. 19:33-34). Being awoke out of his sleep, he was built up a spiritual body, flesh and bones; and, by his ascension, presented to the Father as the federal representative of his church. This is the aggregate of those, who, believing these things, have been introduced into Christ through the laver of the water; according to the saying of the scriptures, “ye are all the children of God in Christ Jesus through the faith. For as many as have been baptized into Christ have entered into Christ,” (*εὐεδυσσασθε*) ... ye are all one *in* Christ Jesus. And if ye be Christ’s, *then* are ye Abraham’s seed, and HEIRS according to the promise” (Gal. 3:26-29). A community of such individuals as these constitutes the mystical body of Christ. By faith, its elements are “members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.” Hence, they are “bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh;” and, therefore, the beloved Eve of the last Adam, the Lord who is to come from heaven, and make her of the same holy spiritual nature as his own. Thus, the church is figuratively taken out of the side of her Lord; for every member of it believes in the remission of sins through his shed blood; and they all believe in the real resurrection of his flesh and bones, for their justification unto life by a similar revival from the dead. “Your bodies are the members,” or flesh and bones, “of Christ; ... and he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit” (1Cor. 6:15, 17). “I have espoused you to one husband,” says Paul, “that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ” (2Cor. 11:2). It will be perceived, then, that the church as defined, is in the present state *the espoused of Christ*, but not actually married. She is in the formative state, being moulded under the hand of God. When she shall be completed, God will then present her to the Man from heaven, “arrayed in fine linen, clean and white” (Rev. 19:7-8). This is she of whom the poet sings, “Hearken,

O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house; so shall the king greatly desire thy beauty: for he is thy Lord; and worship thou him. The king's daughter is all glorious within; her clothing is of wrought gold. She shall be brought unto the king in raiment of needlework; the virgins, her companions that follow her, shall be brought unto thee. With gladness and rejoicing shall they be brought: *they shall enter into the king's palace*" (Psa. 45:10-15). The presentation of Eve to the first Adam was the signal of rejoicing to the Morning Stars; and we perceive that the manifestation of Messiah's Queen will be attended with the "*Alleluia*" of a great multitude, sounding like the roaring of many waters, and the echoes of mighty thunderings, saying, "let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to the Lord God omnipotent: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his betrothed hath made herself ready."

Such is the relationship and destiny of the true church, styled by Paul, "the One Body." It is forming by the word; or, taking it as formed in the apostolic age, but not presented, the apprehension of the apostle has been sadly realized. "I fear," says he, "lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ." The tempter has seduced the betrothed. The simplicity in Christ is no longer characteristic of a community. It is corrupted on every side; and the ruin of the transgression alone prevails. Nevertheless, although there be no hope for the professing world, seeing that it is too "wise in its own conceit;" too self-satisfied with its supposed illumination; glorifying itself, and saying, "I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing, and knows not," and will not be persuaded, "that it is wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked" (Rev. 3:17): — seeing, I say, that this is the irremediable condition of the religious public, yet there remains scope for the deliverance of those, who are disposed to obey God rather than men. If they would become bone of Christ's bone, and flesh of his flesh, they must "leave father and mother, and be joined unto the wife." They find themselves now, perhaps, members of denominations as they happen to be led. These are their parentage according to the fleshly mind. They must be forsaken, and men must become "one flesh" and "one spirit" in the Lord, if they would inherit the kingdom of God (Matt. 10:37). "This is *a great mystery*," says Paul, "but I speak concerning Christ and the church" (Eph. 5:22-32). This mystery, I have endeavored to elucidate in these remarks, though necessarily in a very brief, and therefore imperfect manner. When I shall have finished the work before me, it will have been more minutely unfolded, and, I trust, convincingly explained.

## EDEN.

### “In Eden.”

When Moses penned the words “*in Eden*” (Gen. 2:8), he was westward in “the wilderness of the land of Egypt.” From the expression, then, we are to understand, that there was a country styled Eden in his day, which lay to the eastward of his position. Adam and Eve were its aborigines. It was “*the East*” of the Egyptians, as Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois are “the West” to the Atlantic American States. It was quite an extensive range of country, and in after times became the seat of powerful dominions. It appears to have been well watered by the branches, or tributaries, of “a river that went,” or flowed, “out of it” (Gen. 2:10). These were four principal streams, whose names, as given by Moses, are the Pison, “which compasseth the whole land of Havilah;” the Gihon, “the same is it which compasseth the whole land of Khush,” or Khushistan; the third, the Hiddekel, or Tigris; “that is it which goeth eastward to Assyria. And the fourth river is the Euphrates” (Gen. 2:11-14), frequently styled in the scriptures, “the Great River” (Gen. 15:18). On the map before me, there are four rivers which flow together, and at length form a river which falls into the Persian Gulph. This indicates the country called Eden, namely, that which is watered by these rivers; so that we may reasonably conclude, that in early times it comprehended the land east of the Jordan, Syria, Assyria, part of Persia, Khushistan, and the original settlements of Ishmael (Gen. 25:18).

This country, in after ages, came to be denominated “the Garden of the Lord;” and the kings who reigned in it, “the Trees of Eden.” It was no doubt termed the Lord’s garden as a whole, from the fact of His having, in the beginning, planted a garden in it where He put the man; so that the name of a small part of Eden, came to be applied by His family in the time of Seth, Noah, Shem, Abraham, and Moses, to the whole region; more especially as the future paradise is to occupy a considerable portion of its ancient limits.

The plain of Jordan appears to have been part of Eden from the following texts. “Lot beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered everywhere as *the garden of the Lord*. Then Lot chose him all the plain of Jordan; and Lot journeyed *east*; and dwelled in the cities of the plain” (Gen. 13:10-12); that is, in the East, or Eden.

There is a prophecy in Ezekiel, predicting the overthrow of the Egyptian Pharaoh by the king of Babylon, “the mighty one of the heathen.” In setting forth the certainty of his overthrow, God recapitulates the power and dominion of the Ninevite dynasty of Assyria; which,

however, was not able to withstand the king of Babylon, and therefore there was no hope for Egypt of a successful resistance. In the recapitulation, the Ninevite Assyrian is styled, "*a cedar in Lebanon*;" that is, his dominion extended over the land of the ten tribes of Israel, in which are the cedar-crowned mountains of Lebanon. After describing the greatness of his power by the magnitude of the cedar, the Lord says, "the cedars in the garden of God could not hide him; nor was any tree in the garden of God like unto him in his beauty. I made him fair by the multitude of his branches; so that all the trees of Eden, in the garden of God, envied him" (Eze. 31:3, 8-9). These trees (Dan. 4:20, 22) are representative of the royalties of Mesopotamia, Syria, Israel, &c., which the kings of Assyria had abolished (Isa. 37:12-13); and which "could not hide him," or prevent him getting the ascendancy over them. It is clear, then, from the terms of this beautiful allegory, that the countries I have indicated are comprehended in Eden; that as a whole it is styled the garden of the Lord; and that the trees are the royalties of the land.

That Eden extended to the Mediterranean, or "Great Sea," appears from Ezekiel's prophecy against Tyre. Addressing the Tyrian royalty, he says, "thou hast been in Eden, the garden of the Lord. Thou wast upon the holy mountain of God. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. Therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God. Thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more" (Eze. 28:13, 16, 19). The meaning of this is obvious to one acquainted with the history of the kingdom of Tyre. It was a royalty of Palestine in Upper Galilee, whose king, Hiram, was in intimate alliance with Solomon. He appears to have been a proselyte worshipper of the God of Israel; whom his successors some time afterwards forsook; and therefore God suppressed the kingdom of Tyre by Nebuchadnezzar for seventy years; and finally by the Greeks.

Eden has been a field of blood from the beginning of the contest between the "Seed of the Woman," and the "Seed of the Serpent," until now; and will yet continue to be until the serpent power be broken upon the mountains of Israel. It was in Eden that Abel died by the hand of Cain. There also Abel's antitype was wounded in the heel, when put to death upon the accursed tree; and lastly, to fill up the measure of the iniquity of the blood-defiled land, the serpents of Israel slew the son of Barachus between the temple and altar. But the blood of God's saints shed in Eden, did not cry to Him for vengeance without effect; for as the Lord Jesus declared, so it came to pass. "Behold," said he to the vipers of his day, "I send you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and some of them ye will kill and crucify; and some of them ye will scourge in your synagogues,

and persecute from city to city: that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the land, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zecharias, son of Barachus, whom ye shall slay between the temple and the altar” (Matt. 23:35).

Eden is emphatically the Lord’s land, or garden; and from the creation till the breaking off of Israel’s olive branch, the principal, and almost only, theatre upon which He exhibited His wonders to the nations in the days of old. Egypt and its wilderness may be excepted for forty years. Beyond its limits was outer darkness. Eden only was favored with light, until the gospel found its way among the nations of the west; and, although darkness covers the land, and gross darkness the people; yet the Lord, its light, will arise upon it and His glory shall be seen there (Isa. 60:1-2).

### THE GARDEN OF EDEN.

“And the Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden.”

While Eden was “the East” eastward of the wilderness, the garden of Eden was eastward in Eden. “Eden the garden of the Lord,” and “the garden of Eden,” are quite different ideas. The former designates the whole of Eden as the Lord’s garden; the latter, as merely a plantation in some part of it. To plant a garden is to fence in a certain piece of land, and to adorn it with fruit and ornamental trees and shrubs. If unenclosed, and consequently, unguarded, it is not a garden. The name of the plantation implies, that its surface was protected from the invasion of the animals, whose habits made them unfit tenants of a garden. The place, then, was an inclosure, planted with “every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food.” Its situation, Moses says, was “eastward,” having a river flowing through it to water it. I suspect from this, that it laid somewhere between the Gulph of Persia, and the junction of the Euphrates and the Tigris. The text reads, “and a river went out of Eden to water the garden: and *from thence* it was parted, and became into four heads;” which I should interpret thus: — a river flowing out of Eden was caused to water the garden on its way to the sea; and from the garden northward, the river diverged into its tributaries, which terminated at four several heads. The heads were not in the garden, but at remote distances from it. The garden of Eden was watered by only one, and not by four rivers; as it is written, “a river went out to water it;” which certainly excludes the four from its inclosure.

In the septuagint of this text, the word *garden* is expressed by *παράδεισος*, which is transferred into our language without translation. *Paradise* is a Persian word adopted into the Greek, and expressed in Hebrew by *parades* or *pardes*. It signifies a park, a forest, or preserve; a

garden of trees of various kinds, a delightful grove, &c. It is found in these texts: — “I made me gardens (*paradises*) and orchards, and I planted trees in them of all kinds of fruits” (Ecc. 2:5); and, “a garden enclosed (*a paradise*) is my sister spouse, &c.; thy plants are an orchard of pomegranates, &c.” (Cant. 4:12-13). The latter text is part of a description of Solomon’s vineyard, representative of that part of Eden over which he reigned; and metaphorical of its beauty, fertility, and glory, when the Heir of the vineyard, the “greater than Solomon,” shall come to Zion, and “marry the land” of Eden, as defined in the everlasting covenant made with Abraham (Gen. 15:18). For so it is written, “thy land, O Zion, shall no more be termed desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, (*i.e., my beloved is in her*), and thy land Beulah, (*i.e., married*): for Jehovah delighteth in thee, and *thy land shall be married*. For as a young man marrieth a virgin, so shall thy sons marry thee: and as the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee” (Isa. 62:4-5).

When the marriage, or union, takes place between the sons of Zion, and their king, with the Land of Promise in Eden, it will again become the garden of the Lord, or Paradise, which His own right hand hath planted. For “the Lord shall comfort Zion: He will comfort all her waste places; and He will make her wilderness like Eden, and her desert like the garden of the Lord; joy and gladness shall be found therein, thanksgiving and the voice of melody” (Isa. 51:3). “Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the briar shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the Lord for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off” (Isa. 55:13). At that time, “I will open rivers in high places, and fountains in the midst of the valleys: I will make the wilderness a pool of water, and the dry land springs of water. I will plant in the wilderness the cedar, the shittah tree, and the myrtle tree, and the oil tree; I will set in the desert the fir tree, and the pine, and the box together: that they (Israel) may see, and know, and consider, and understand together, that the hand of the Lord hath done this, and the Holy One of Israel hath created it” (Isa. 41:18-20).

These testimonies reveal a future state in regard to Eden, of which its primitive garden is a beautiful and appropriate representation. Once the seat of a *paradise* on a small scale, it is destined to be transformed from its present desolation into “*the Paradise of God*.” The country of the four rivers, even to the west from sea to sea, is predetermined to shine forth as “the glory of all lands.” Paradise hath no other locality. Other orbs may have their paradises; but as far as man is concerned, the Paradise of God will be by Him planted in Eden according to “*the promise*.” “In that day, shall Israel be the third with Egypt and Assyria, even a blessing *in the*

*midst* of the land;" that is, of Eden: "whom the Lord of hosts shall bless, saying, Blessed be Egypt, My people, and Assyria, the work of My hands, and Israel, Mine inheritance" (Isa. 19:24-25).

In the letter to the congregation at Ephesus, the Spirit says, "to him that overcometh will I give to eat of the Tree of Life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God" (Rev. 2:7). The simple import of this is as follows. The saints of God are termed in scripture, "Trees of Righteousness," which bring forth good fruit; and the King of Saints, the Tree of Life. This, then, is the symbol of Christ as the giver of life. "As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father; so *he that eateth me*," says Christ, "even he *shall live by me*" (Jn. 6:57). Hence, to give a man to eat of the Tree of Life, is for the Lord Jesus to raise a true believer from among the dead to incorruptible life. He will then eat, or partake, of that life, which he is ordained to bestow who said of himself, "I am the way, and the truth, and *the life*." But, none of the believers, or heirs of life, can partake of the life-giving tree, until it is manifested in the Paradise of God; that is, until the Lord appears in his kingdom (2Tim. 4:1, 8; 1Pet. 1:7, 13). We shall see in the second part of this work the particulars concerning this kingdom. I shall, therefore content myself with remarking here, that when it is manifested, it will be established in the Lord's land, that is, in Eden. Hence, the promise, interpreted into plain English, is — "To the believer that overcomes the world (1Jn. 5:4), will I, the Lord, who am the life, give glory, honor, and immortality, when I come to stand on the Mount of Olives (Zech. 14:4), and to re-establish the kingdom and throne of David, as in the days of old" (Am. 9:11). There is no immortality, nor Paradise until then; neither can any attain to them unless they "overcome the world;" for the promise is only "to him that overcometh."

But, to this doctrine sceptics object, that Paradise must have a present existence somewhere; seeing that, on the day of his crucifixion, Jesus told the thief that he should be with him in Paradise on that day; as it is written, "I say to thee, *to-day* shalt thou be with me in Paradise" (Lk. 23:43). I admit, that it is so written in English; but, I find there are various readings and punctuations in the Greek. In the first place, the thief's petition is differently worded in some manuscripts. In the common version it reads, "remember me, Lord, when thou comest *in thy kingdom*, *εν τη Βασιλεια σου*: but in others, it is various, though in sense the same — as, "remember me when thou comest *in the day of thy coming*, *εν τη ημερα της ελευσεως σου*. Now the Lord "comes in his kingdom" "in the day of his coming;" therefore, I say, the two phrases are in sense the same, only the latter more plainly suggests to "the unskilful in the word of

righteousness" (Heb. 5:13), the import of the term "to-day," in the answer to the petition.

In the next place, Jesus did not evade the thief's prayer, but gave him a direct and intelligible reply. He told him, in effect, that what he requested should be granted; in other words, that when he was himself in his kingdom he should be there too. But, does the reader imagine, that Jesus told him *the time when*, seeing that he was not even himself acquainted with the time when the Jewish State, as constituted by the Mosaic code, should be abolished? And, till this was set aside, he could not come in his kingdom; for then he is to sit and rule, and be a priest upon his throne (Zech. 6:12-13, 15); which he could not be co-existent with the law: because the law of Moses would permit no one to officiate as a priest, who was not of the tribe of Levi; and Jesus was descended from Judah (Heb. 7:12-14). "Heaven and earth," or the Mosaic constitution of things in Eden, "shall pass away," said Jesus: "but of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven; *neither the Son*, but the Father" (Mk. 13:31-32).

Furthermore, does the reader suppose, that the Lord informed the thief of the time when he would come in his kingdom; or, that it could possibly be, that he came in his kingdom on the day of his suffering; seeing that on the forty-third day afterwards, he refused to tell even the apostles the times and the seasons when he would "*restore AGAIN* the kingdom to Israel?" "It is not *for you* to know the times and the seasons, which the Father hath put in His own power" (Acts 1:3, 6-7). This was his language to the apostles. The kingdom could not be restored again to Israel under the Mosaic code. This had "decayed, and waxed old, and was ready to vanish away" (Heb. 8:13). It was to be "cast down to the ground," the daily sacrifice was to be taken away, and the temple and city to be demolished, by the Little Horn of the Goat, or Roman power (Dan. 8:9-12, 24; 9:26). To tell *them* of the times and the seasons of the kingdom, would have been to have informed them of this national catastrophe; of which, they were kept in ignorance, that they might not fall asleep, but be continually on the watch.

But, though Jesus did not then know the times and the seasons of the kingdom, he knows them now; for, about thirty years after the destruction of Jerusalem, "God gave him a revelation of the things which must shortly come to pass" (Rev. 1:1); and in this apocalypse, the times and seasons are set forth in order. But, to return to the case of the thief. In saying "to-day," Jesus did not, and could not, tell him the precise time when he should be with him in Paradise. In some Greek manuscripts, there is a various, and no doubt the correct, punctuation. The comma, instead of being after

“thee,” is placed after “to-day;” as, “I say unto thee to-day, — thou shalt be with me in *the* Paradise, *εν τω παραδεισω*.” that is, “at this time, or, I now say to thee, thou shalt be with me in my kingdom in the day of my coming.”

But, if the objector insist upon an interpretation of the passage as it stands in the common version, then let it be so; his position will be by no means less easy to carry. His instantaneous translation of souls to Paradise at death, as far as it is fortified by this passage, hangs upon a thread, like the sword of the Syracusan tyrant; and that is, the word “to-day.” This is a scripture term, and must be explained by the scripture use of it. In the sacred writings, then, the term is used to express a period of *over two thousand years*. This use of it occurs in David, as it is written, “To-day if ye will hear His voice, harden not your hearts, lest ye enter not into My rest” (Psa. 95:7-11). The apostle, commenting upon this passage about one thousand years after it was written, says, “exhort one another daily, *while it is called* to-day;” and, “labor, to enter into the rest that remaineth for the people of God” (Heb. 3:13; 4:11, 9). Thus, it was called “to-day,” when David wrote; and “to-day,” when Paul commented upon it. This was a long day; but one, however, which is not yet finished; and will continue unclosed until the manifestation of the rest in the Paradise of God. If it be admitted, that we are still in “the day of salvation,” then it must be received as true, that we are living “while it is called to-day” — that “to-day” is *now*; and this “now” will be present until the Lord Jesus enters into his rest (Psa. 132:13-18), which he cannot do until he has finished the work God has given him to do (Isa. 49:5-6, 8; 40:10). “Behold, *now* is the time of acceptance; *now is the day*,” or the “to-day,” “*of salvation*” (2Cor. 6:2), — a period of time from Joshua to the future glorious manifestation of Christ in the kingdom, to say nothing of “the accepted time” to the patriarchs, before the typical rest of Israel in the promised land.

This “to-day,” however, is limited both to Jew and Gentile; and in defining this limitation, Paul tells us, that “to-day” means, “*after so long a time*.” “God limiteth *a certain day*,” says he, “saying in David, to-day, after so long a time: as it is said, to-day if ye will hear His voice, harden not your hearts” (Heb. 4:7). When this time has elapsed, it will no longer be “to-day;” but *to-morrow*, or the seventh day of the millennial week. If then we substitute the apostle’s definition for the word “to-day” in Christ’s reply to the thief, it will read thus: — “Verily, I say to thee, after so long a time thou shalt be with me in the Paradise;” but, how many years it would be before that time terminated, he gave the petitioner not the slightest intimation of.

Lastly, is it not the very climax of absurdity to talk of Jesus being “in his kingdom,” or “in the Paradise,” which were synonymous, while he was lying dead in the tomb! Is his kingdom among the dead? He told the Pharisees it was among the living. “Oh, but,” says one, “he descended into hell;” “true,” says another, “and while he was there he preached the gospel to the dead, and proclaimed repentance to the spirits in prison. He and the thief, that is to say, their souls, were there together as soon as death released them. This was Paradise.” “Not exactly so,” adds a third. “That savors too much of purgatory. They were in an intermediate state of blessedness before the throne of God, in the kingdoms beyond the skies.” “How can that be,” says a fourth; “is the blessedness in God’s presence only intermediate? They went straight to the fulness of joy for evermore.” Why, then, was Jesus raised that he might go to the Father (Jn. 16:16), if he were with the Father before; and, where did he *leave* the thief, for he was not raised; and if not raised, but left behind, how can he be with the Lord in Paradise? When this question is answered, it will be time enough to glance at the traditions extant upon this subject — dogmatisms, however, which none who understand the gospel of the kingdom can possibly entertain.

### **MAN’S DOMINION.**

“Let them have dominion.”

The garden being prepared in Eden, the Lord placed the man there whom He had formed. It was there the “deep sleep” came over him, and he first beheld his bride. They were now settled in Paradise; and, protected by its inclosure from the intrusion of the inferior creatures, they passed their days in blissful tranquillity; innocent of transgression, and in peaceful harmony with God and the creatures He had made. Adam dressed the garden and kept it. This was his occupation. Though as yet sinless, it was no part of his enjoyments to be idle. To eat bread in the sweat of the face is sorrowful; but to work without toil is an element of health, and cheerfulness; and is doubtless the rule of life to all the intelligences of the universe of God.

But, he was not simply an inhabitant of the Paradise, placed there “to dress and keep it.” The work before him was to begin the replenishment, and subjugation of the earth. For in the blessing pronounced upon them, God said, “be fruitful, and multiply, and *replenish* the earth, and subdue it.” The material was all before him. The earth was to be peopled; and the culture of the garden, as the model of improvement, to be extended as his

posterity spread themselves over its surface.

This command to “replenish the earth,” strengthens my previous conclusion, that the earth had been inhabited, at some period anterior to the creation of the six days; and that its population had been all swept away by a catastrophe similar to the Noachic flood. That “replenish” means to *fill* the earth *again*; is manifest from the use of the word in the blessing pronounced upon Noah. As it is written, “and God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, ‘be fruitful, and multiply, and *replenish* the earth’.” There is no room for dispute here. Every one must admit that it signifies to *fill again*; for having been filled by Adam, all his posterity, except eight persons, were swept away by the deluge; and Noah and his sons were to supply their place, or refill it, as at this day. I see, therefore, no good reason why the same word should not be similarly interpreted in both cases; which I have concluded to do.

Man’s conquests in a sinless state were to be over rocks, mountains, seas, and rivers, by which he might subdue them to his own convenience and enjoyment; and, perhaps, had he continued innocent of transgression until his mission was accomplished; that is, until by his fruitfulness he had filled the earth again with people, and had subdued it from its natural wildness to a paradisaic state — his nature would have been exalted to an equality with the Elohim; and the earth, without any violent changes, have become his dwelling place for ever. But, the creator foreseeing that man would transgress, laid the foundation of the earth upon such principles as would afterwards accommodate it to his altered circumstances. Had He foreseen a result different from what has actually come to pass, He would, doubtless, have framed or constituted it, with reference to that result. But, while He did not necessitate man’s transgression, His plan was to constitute a natural world with reference to it as its basis; and then, on the other hand, without necessitating man’s obedience, to constitute a spiritual, or incorruptible, order of things upon the earth, having an intelligent and voluntary conformity to His precepts, as the foundation upon which it should be built. This, then, is the present order of things. Man is replenishing the earth and subduing it. He is reducing it from its natural wildness. Subduing land and sea to the convenience of nations; and subjugating likewise, the wild creatures of his own species to law and order, and exterminating the untameable; — he is preparing the world for an advance to a *more exalted*, yet not perfect, *state*, which the Man from heaven shall introduce, and establish; not, however, upon the destruction of nature and society, but upon the improvement of the first, and the regeneration of the last; which shall continue for a thousand years, as *the intermediate state* between the present purely animal and natural, and the

final purely spiritual, or incorruptible, and unchangeable constitution of the globe.

In carrying his mission into effect, it was necessary that the animal man should have dominion. He was too feeble to execute it without assistance; and there was no source from which he could receive *voluntary* aid. It was needful, therefore, that he should receive power by which he could compel the co-operation he required. For this reason, as well as for his own defence against the inconvenient familiarity of the inferior creatures with their lord, God gave him dominion over them all. "Have dominion," said He, "over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth." This was the charter of man's sovereignty over flesh and blood. Himself the king, and all living creatures the subjects of his dominion. As to his own species, however, he was permitted to be *neither a law to himself, nor to his fellows.*

The right of man to exercise lordship over his fellow man beyond the circle of his own family, was not granted to him "*by the grace of God.*" God's grace only conferred upon him what I have already stated. Even his domestic sovereignty was to cease, when the time came for one to leave father and mother. After this separation, all paternal rule ended, and the only bondage which continued was the yoke of affection. Man rules in his family by the grace of God, which says, "children obey your parents *in the Lord*; for this is right. Honor thy father and mother; which is the first commandment *with a promise*; that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long in the land." This obedience is founded on the fitness of things; but even this is not enjoined absolutely. It is only "parents *in the Lord*," who have a divine right to expect unqualified obedience from the christian children of their household. If parents *not* in the Lord, require their children to do contrary to, or to abstain from doing, His will, obedience should be firmly, but affectionately, refused. This would probably produce trouble and division in the family, if the parent were an uncultivated man of the flesh, or a bigot. In that case, he would behave like a tyrant, and endeavour to coerce them to obey him, rather than their conviction of the truth; whose nature it is to divide between flesh and spirit, sinners and saints, and to create a man's foes out of the members of his own household (Matt. 10:35-36). But such children should remember that "it is better to obey God than man" (Acts 4:19; 5:29): and that he that loves parents more than Jesus, is not worthy of him. Better leave the paternal roof as an outcast, than to dishonor him by preferring their laws to his.

If man's domestic sovereignty be thus qualified and limited by the

grace of God, shall we say that He conferred on man “a divine right” to govern his species in its spiritual and civil concerns? To found kingdoms and empires, and to invent religions as a means of imparting durability to their thrones? What God permits and regulates is one thing; and what He appoints is another. He permits thrones and dominions, principalities and powers to exist; He regulates them, setting over them the basest of men (Dan. 4:17), if such answer His intentions best; prevents them circumventing His purposes; and commands His saints to “be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but it is *under* God (*υπο θεου marginal reading:*) the powers that be are *set under* God — *υπο του θεου τεταγμεναι εισιν*. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the regulation of God — *του θεου διαταγη*; and they that resist shall receive to themselves punishment. For the magistrates are not a terror to good deeds, but to the evil ... Do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same; for he is a servant of God unto that which is good for thee” (Rom. 13:1-5).

God did not commission man to set up these powers. All He required of him was to obey whatsoever He chose to appoint. But, when man became a rebel, his rebellious spirit was transmitted to his posterity; and, refusing to be governed by the grace of God, they founded dominions of their own, upon principles which were utterly subversive of the government of God upon the earth. He could as easily have quashed their treasonable proceedings as He stopped the building of Babel; but in His wisdom He chose rather to give them scope, and to subject their usurpations to such regulations as would in the end, promote His own glory and their confusion. Therefore it is that Paul says, “every power is under God; and the powers that be are placed under Him.” This is matter of great consolation and rejoicing to His saints; for, though the tyrants may propose, it is God only that disposes events. The saints who understand the word will keep aloof from politics. None are more interested in them than they; but they will mix themselves up neither with one party nor another; for God regulates them all: therefore to be found in any such strife, would be to contend in some way or other against Him. The servant of the Lord must not strive, except “for the faith once delivered to the saints.” For this he is commanded to “contend earnestly” (Jude 3); because such a contention is to “fight the good fight of faith,” and to “lay hold on eternal life.”

In the beginning, then, God reserved to Himself the right of dominion over the human race. He gave it not to Adam, nor to his posterity; but claimed the undivided sovereignty over all man’s concerns for Himself by

right of creation; and for him whom He might ordain as His representative upon earth. All the kingdoms that have, or do exist, with the exception of the Commonwealth of Israel, are based upon the usurpation of the rights of God, and of His son Jesus Christ; nor is there a king or queen, pope or emperor, among the Gentiles, who reigns "by the grace of God." They reign by the same grace, or favor, by which sin reigns over the nations. They have no favor in the eyes of God. He bears with them for a time; and makes use of them as His sword to maintain order among the lawless; until His gracious purposes in favor of His saints shall be manifested, according to the arrangements of the times He has disposed. Then "will His saints be joyful in glory; and the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand: to execute vengeance upon the heathen, and punishments upon the people; to bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; to execute upon them the judgment written; this honor have all His saints. Praise ye the Lord" (Psa. 149:5-9).

### **TREE OF KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL.**

"Out of the ground made the Lord God to grow the Tree of Life in the midst of the garden, and the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil."

These are the most remarkable trees that have ever appeared in the vegetable kingdom. They were "pleasant to the sight, and *good for food*." This, however, is all that is said about their nature and appearance. They would seem to have been the only trees of their kind; for, if they had been common, Eve's desire to taste the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge, and their inclination to eat of that of the Tree of Life, could have been gratified by eating of other similar trees. What the fruits were we cannot tell; nor is it important to know. Supposition says, that the Tree of Knowledge was an apple tree; but testimony makes no deposition on the subject; therefore we can believe nothing in the case.

These trees, however, are interesting to us, not on account of their natural characteristics, but because of *the interdict* which rested upon them. Adam and Eve were permitted to take freely of all the other trees in the garden, "but of the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil," said the Lord God, "thou shalt not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it: for *in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die*" (Gen. 2:17; 3:3). Naturally, it was as good for food as any other tree; but, as soon as the Lord God laid His interdict upon it, its fruit became death to the eater; not instant death, however, for their eyes were to be opened (Gen. 3:5, 7), and they were to become as the gods, or Elohim, being acquainted with good and evil even

as they (Gen. 3:5, 22). The final consequence of eating of this tree being death, it may be styled the *Tree of Death* in contradistinction to the *Tree of Life*. Decay of body, and consequent termination of life, ending in corruption, or *mortality*, was the attribute which this fatal tree was prepared to *bestow* upon the individual who should presume to touch it.

In the sentence "*thou shalt surely die*," death is mentioned in the Bible for the first time. But, Adam lived several centuries after he had eaten of the tree, which has proved a difficulty in the definition of the death there indicated, hitherto insuperable upon the principles of the creeds. Creed theology paraphrases the sentence thus — "in the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt die figuratively, thine immortal soul becoming liable to the pains of hell for ever; and thy body shall die literally afterwards." But, it is very evident to one unspoiled by the philosophy of the creeds, that this interpretation is not contained in the text. The obscurity which creates the difficulty, does not lie in the words spoken, but in the English version of them. The phrase "*in the day*" is supposed to mean that *on the very day itself* upon which Adam transgressed, he was to die in some sense. But this is not the use of the phrase even in the English of the same chapter. For in the fourth verse of the second chapter, it is written, "*in the day* that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens, and every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew." This, we know, was the work of six days; so that "*in the day*" is expressive of that period. But in the text before us, the same phrase represents a much longer period, for Adam did not die until he was 930 years old; therefore, the day in which he died did not terminate till then.

But, it may be objected, that the day in the text must be limited to the day of the eating; because it says, "in the day *that thou eatest thereof* thou shalt surely die;" and as he was not eating of it 930 years, but only partook of it once on a certain natural day, it cannot mean that long period. But, I am not prepared to admit, that the physical action of eating is the only eating indicated in the text. Adam fed upon the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge all the time from his eating of the natural fruit until he died. The natural fruit in its effect was figurative of the fruit of transgressing the interdict, which said, "thou shalt not eat of it." The figurative fruit was of a mixed character. It was "*good*," or *pleasant* to the flesh; but "*evil*" in its consequences. "By the *law*," says the apostle, "is the *knowledge of sin*;" for "sin is the transgression of law" (Rom. 3:20; 1Jn. 3:4). Sin is pleasant to the flesh; because the deeds forbidden are natural to it. It is that "*good*" fruit which the animal man delights to eat. The flesh, the eyes, and life, have all their desires, or lusts, which, when gratified, constitute the

*chiefest good* that men under their dominion seek after. But, God has forbidden indulgence in these lusts. He says, “love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world” (1Jn. 2:15-16). And again, “the friendship of the world is enmity with God. Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God” (Jas. 4:4); and, “if ye live after the flesh ye shall die” (Rom. 8:13). This language is unmistakeable. To indulge then in the lawless pleasures, which “sinful flesh” terms “good,” is to “*bring forth sin*” (Jas. 1:15), or to bear fruit unto death; because “the wages of sin is death” (Rom. 6:21-23). “Whatsoever a man *soweth*, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to the flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption” (Gal. 6:7-8). All “the ills that flesh is heir to” make up the “evil,” which has come upon man as the result of transgressing the law of God, which said to Adam, “thou shalt not eat thereof.” The fruit of his eating was the gratification of his flesh in the lusts thereof, and the subjection of himself and posterity to the “evil” of eating of the cursed ground in sorrow all the days of their lives (Gen. 3:17-19).

All the posterity of Adam, when they attain the age of puberty and their eyes are in the opening crisis, begin to eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of good and evil. Previous to that natural change, they are in their innocency. But, thenceforth, the world, as a serpent-entwined fruit tree, stands before the mind, enticing it to take and eat, and enjoy the *good* things it affords. To speculate upon the lawfulness of compliance is partly to give consent. There must be no reasoning upon the harmlessness of conforming to the world. Its enticements without, and the sympathizing instincts of the flesh within, must be instantly suppressed; for, to hold a parley with its lusts, is dangerous. When one is seduced by “the deceitfulness of sin,” “he is drawn away of his own lusts, and enticed. Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin; and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death” (Jas. 1:14-15): in other words, he plucks the forbidden fruit, and dies, if not forgiven.

Furthermore, the sentence “*thou shalt surely die*,” is proof that the phrase “*in the day*” relates to a longer period than the day of the natural eating. This was not a sentence to be consummated in a moment, as when a man is shot or guillotined. It required time; for the death threatened was the result, or finishing, of a certain process; which is very clearly indicated in the original Hebrew. In this language the phrase is *muth temuth*, which literally rendered is, DYING THOU SHALT DIE. The sentence, then, as a whole

reads thus — “*In the day of thy eating from it dying thou shalt die.*” From this reading, it is evident, that Adam was to be subjected to a process, but not to an endless process; but to one which should commence with the transgression, and end with his extinction. The process is expressed by *muth, dying*; and the last stage of the process by *temuth, thou SHALT DIE*.

This view is fully sustained by the paraphrase found in the following words: — “Cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life. In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread *TILL thou return into the ground*; for out of it wast thou taken; for dust thou art, and unto dust thou shalt return” (Gen. 3:19). The context of this informs us, that Adam having transgressed, had been summoned to trial and judgment for the offence. The Lord God interrogated him, saying, “hast thou eaten of the tree of which I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?” Adam confessed his guilt, which was sufficiently manifest before by his timidity, and shame at his nakedness. The offence being proved, the Judge then proceeded to pass sentence upon the transgressors. This He did in the order of transgression; first upon the Serpent; then upon Eve; and lastly upon Adam, in the words of the text. In these, the ground is cursed, and the man sentenced to a life of sorrowful labor, and to *a resolution into his original and parent dust*. The terms in which the last particular of his sentence is expressed, are explanatory of the penalty annexed to the law. “Thou shalt return into the ground,” and, “unto dust shalt thou return,” are phrases equivalent to “dying thou shalt die.” Hence, the divine interpretation of the sentence, “in the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die,” is, “in the day of thy eating all the days of thy life of sorrow, returning thou shalt return into the dust of the ground whence thou wast taken.” Thus, “*dying*,” in the meaning of the text, is to be the subject of a sorrowful, painful, and laborious existence, which wears a man out, and brings him down to the brink of the grave; and by “*die*,” is signified, the end, or last stage, of corporeal existence, which is marked by *a ceasing to breathe, and decomposition into dust*. Thus, man’s life from the womb to the grave is a dying existence; and, so long as he retains his *form*, as in the case of Jesus in the sepulchre, he is existent in death; for what is termed *being*, is corporeal existence in life and death. The end of our being is the end of that process by which we are resolved into dust — *we cease to be*. This was Adam’s state, if we may so speak, before he was created. He had no being. And at this non-existence he arrived after a lapse of 930 years from his formation; and thus were practically illustrated the penalty of the law, and the sentence of the Judge. For from the day of his transgression, he began his pilgrimage to the grave, at which he surely arrived. He made

his couch in the dust, and saw corruption; and with its mother earth commingled all that was known as Adam, the federal head, and chief father of mankind.

**TREE OF LIFE.**

“Eat and live for ever.”

This was planted “in the midst of the garden.” It was also a fruit-bearing tree. It would seem to have been as accessible as the Tree of Knowledge; for after the man had eaten of this, he was driven out of the garden that he might not touch that likewise. Its fruit, however, was of a quality entirely opposite to that of which they had eaten. Both trees bore good fruit; but that of the Tree of Life had the quality of perpetuating the living existence of the eater for ever. This appears from the testimony of Moses, who reports, that after the transgressors had received judgment, “the Lord God said, Behold the man has become as one of us, to know good and evil; and now, *lest* he put forth his hand, and take also of the Tree of Life, *and eat and live for ever*: therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground whence he was taken” (Gen. 3:22-23). From this, we learn, that the Lord God had instituted this tree to give life, and that Adam was aware of what would result from eating of its fruit. It is probable that, had he been obedient to the law of the Tree of Knowledge, he would have been permitted to eat of the Tree of Life, after he had fulfilled his destiny as an animal man; and, instead of dying away into dust, have been “changed in the twinkling of an eye,” as Enoch was; and as they are to be, who shall be ready for the Lord at his coming. But, of this we can say nothing certain, because nothing is testified on the subject; and beyond the testimony our faith cannot go, though opinion and credulity may.

If, then, Adam had eaten of the Tree of Life, he would have been changed from a living soul into a soul capable of living for ever: and not only capable, but it would seem, that being immortal, the Lord God would have permitted him to remain so. For, we are not to suppose, that, if a thing become capable of undecaying existence, therefore its creator cannot destroy it; consequently, if Adam as a sinner had eaten of the Tree of Life, his immortality would have been only permitted, and not necessitated contrary to the power of the Lord God.

To have permitted Adam and Eve to become deathless and to remain so, in a state of good and evil such as the world experiences, would have been a disproportionate and unmerciful punishment. It would have been to populate the earth with deathless sinners; and to convert it into the abode

of deathless giants in crime; in other words, the earth would have become, what creed theologists describe “hell” to be in their imagination. The good work of the sixth day would then have proved a terrible mishap, instead of the nucleus of a glorious manifestation of divine wisdom and power. But, a world of undying sinners in a state of good and evil, was not according to the divine plan. This required first the sanctification of sinners; then their probation; and afterwards, their exaltation, or humiliation, according to their works. Therefore, lest Adam should invert this order, and “put on immortality” before he should be morally renewed, or purified from sin, and the moral likeness of God be formed in him again; the Lord God expelled him from the dangerous vicinity of the Tree of Life. He drove him forth that he should not then become incorruptible and deathless.

The first intimation of immortality for man is contained in the text before us. But, in this instance it eluded his grasp. He was expelled “lest he should eat, and live for ever.” It was because immortality belonged to this tree; or rather, was communicable by or through it to the eater, that it was styled *etz ha-chayim*, that is, the Tree of the Lives; for that is its name when literally rendered. The phrase “of the lives” is particularly appropriate; for it was the tree of endless life, both to Adam and Eve, if permitted to eat of it. If the world enticing to sin, be fitly represented by the serpent-entwined tree, imparting death to its victim, Christ, who “has overcome the world” (Jn. 16:33), as the giver of life to his people, is well set forth by the other tree in the midst of the garden; which was a beautiful emblem of the incarnated power and wisdom (Prov. 3:13, 18; 1Cor. 1:24) of the Deity, planted as the Tree of Life in the future Paradise of God (Rev. 22:2).

### **MAN IN HIS NOVITIATE.**

“God made man upright.”

When the work of the six days was completed, the Lord God reviewed all that He had made, and pronounced it “very good.” This quality pertained to every thing terrestrial. The beasts of the field, the fowls of the air, reptiles, and men, were all “very good;” and all made up a natural system of things, or world, as perfect as the nature of things required. Its excellency, however, had relation solely to its physical quality. Man, though “very good,” was so only as a piece of divine workmanship. He was made different from what he afterwards became. Being made in the image, after the likeness of the Elohim, he was “made upright.” He had no conscience of evil; for he did not know what it was. He was neither

virtuous, nor vicious; holy, nor unholy; but in his beginning simply innocent of good or evil deeds. Being without a history, he was without character. This had to be developed; and could only be formed for good or evil, by his own independent action under the divine law. In short, when Adam and Eve came forth from the hand of their potter, they were morally in a similar condition to a new-born babe; excepting that a babe is born under the constitution of sin, and *involuntarily* subjected to “vanity” (Rom. 8:20); while they first beheld the light in a state of things where evil had as yet no place. They were created in the stature of a perfect man and woman; but with their sexual feelings undeveloped; in ignorance, and without experience.

The interval between their formation and the transgression was the period of their novitiate. The Spirit of God had made them; and during this time, “the inspiration of the Almighty was giving them understanding” (Job 32:8; 33:4). In this way, knowledge was imparted to them. It became power, and enabled them to meet all the demands of their situation. Thus, they were “taught of God,” and became the depositories of those arts and sciences, in which they afterwards instructed their sons and daughters, to enable them to till the ground, tend the flocks and herds, provide the conveniences of life, and subdue the earth.

Guided by the precepts of the Lord God, his conscience continued good, and his heart courageous. “They were naked, both the man and his wife, and were not ashamed” (Gen. 2:25). They were no more abashed than children in their nudity; for, though adults in stature, yet being in the infancy of nature, they stood before the Elohim and in the face of one another, without embarrassment. This fact was not accidentally recorded. As we shall see hereafter, it is a clue, as it were, given to enable us to understand the nature of the transgression.

While in the state of good unmixed with evil, were Adam and Eve mortal or immortal? This is a question which presents itself to many who study the Mosaic account of the origin of things. It is an interesting question, and worthy of all attention. Some hastily reply, they were mortal; that is, if they had not sinned they would nevertheless have died. It is probable they would after a long time, if no further change had been operated upon their nature. But the Tree of Life seems to have been provided, for the purpose of this change being effected, through the eating of its fruit, if they had proved themselves worthy of the favour. The animal nature will sooner or later dissolve. It was not constituted so as to continue in life, for ever, independent of any further modification. We may admit, therefore, the corruptibility, and consequent mortality, of their nature,

without saying that they were mortal. The inherent tendency of their nature to death would have been arrested; and they would have been changed as Enoch and Elijah were; and as they of whom Paul says, "*we shall not all die.*" The "*we*" here indicated possess an animal, and therefore corruptible nature; and, if not "changed," would surely die: but inasmuch as they are to "be changed in the twinkling of an eye at the last trumpet," though corruptible, they are not mortal. In this sense, therefore, I say, that in their novitiate, Adam and his betrothed had a nature *capable* of corruption, but were not subject to death, or mortal. The penalty was "dying thou shalt die;" that is, "you shall not be permitted to eat of the Tree of Life in arrest of dissolution; but the inherent tendency of your animal nature shall take its course, and return you to the dust whence you originally came." Mortality was in disobedience as the wages of sin, and not a necessity.

But, if they were not mortal in their novitiate, it is also true that they were not immortal. To say that immortals were expelled from the garden of Eden, that they might not live for ever by eating of the tree, is absurd. The truth is in few words, man was created with a nature endued with certain susceptibilities. He was capable of death; and capable of endless life; but, whether he should merge into mortality; or, by a physical change be clothed with immortality, was predicated on his choosing to do good or evil. Capacity must not be confounded with impletion. A vessel may be capable of holding a pint of fluid; but it does not therefore follow that there is a pint in it, or any at all. In the Paradise of Eden, mortality and immortality were set before the man and his companion. They were external to them. They were to avoid the former, and seek after the latter, by obedience to the law of God. They were capable of being filled with either; but with which depended upon their actions: for immortality is the end of holiness (Rom. 6:22), without which no man can see the Lord.

We meet with no traces in the Mosaic history of ceremonial observances, or religious worship, pertaining to the novitiate. To rest one day in seven; believe that the Lord God would perform His word if they transgressed; and to abstain from touching the Tree of Knowledge, was all their gracious benefactor required. There was no "religion" in the garden of Eden — no sacrifices, or offerings; for sin was as yet a stranger there. Their tenure of the Paradise was predicated upon their abstinence from sin: so that it could be forfeited only by transgression of the law of the Lord.

## Chapter 3 — God's Law and How Sin Entered the World

PROBATION BEFORE EXALTATION, THE LAW OF THE MORAL UNIVERSE OF GOD. — THE TEMPTATION OF THE LORD JESUS BY SATAN THE TRIAL OF HIS FAITH BY THE FATHER. — THE TEMPTATION EXPLAINED. — GOD'S FOREKNOWLEDGE DOES NOT NECESSITATE; NOR DOES HE JUSTIFY, OR CONDEMN, BY ANTICIPATION. — THE SERPENT AN INTELLECTUAL ANIMAL, BUT NOT A MORAL AGENT, NOR INSPIRED — HE DECEIVES THE WOMAN. — THE NATURE OF THE TRANSGRESSION. — EVE BECOMES THE TEMPTER TO ADAM — THE TRANSGRESSION CONSUMMATED IN THE CONCEPTION OF CAIN. — A GOOD CONSCIENCE, AND AN EVIL CONSCIENCE, DEFINED. — MAN CANNOT COVER HIS OWN SIN — THE CARNAL MIND ILLUSTRATED BY THE REASONING OF THE SERPENT. — IT IS METAPHORICALLY THE SERPENT IN THE FLESH. — GOD'S TRUTH THE ONLY RULE OF RIGHT AND WRONG. — THE SERPENT IN THE FLESH IS MANIFESTED IN THE WICKEDNESS OF INDIVIDUALS; AND IN THE SPIRITUAL AND TEMPORAL INSTITUTIONS OF THE WORLD. — SERPENT-SIN IN THE FLESH IDENTIFIED WITH "THE WICKED ONE." — THE PRINCE OF THE WORLD. — THE KINGDOM OF SATAN AND THE WORLD IDENTICAL. — THE WILES OF THE DEVIL. — THE "PRINCE" SHOWN TO BE SIN, WORKING AND REIGNING IN ALL SINNERS. — HOW HE WAS "CAST OUT" BY JESUS. — "THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL." — "BOUND OF SATAN;" DELIVERING TO SATAN. — THE GREAT DRAGON — THE DEVIL AND SATAN. — THE MAN OF SIN.

**M**AN in the first estate is "a little lower than the angels;" but, in the second, or higher, estate, he is to be "crowned with glory and honor;" and to take his stand in the universe upon an equality with them in nature and renown. Man's first estate is the natural and animal; his second, the spiritual, or incorruptible. To be exalted from the present to the future state and inheritance, he must be subjected to trial. From the examples recorded in the scriptures, it is evident, that God has established it as the rule of His grace; that is, the principle upon which He bestows His honors and rewards — to prove men before He exalts them. Probation, then, is the indispensable ordeal, to which every man is subjected in the providence of God, before he is accepted as "fit for the Master's use" (2Tim. 2:20-21). By these examples, also, it appears, that man's probation is made to bear upon the *trial of his faith* by testing *his obedience*. An untried faith is worth nothing; but a faith that stands the test of trial, "is much more precious than gold which perisheth, though it be tried with fire;" because the sustained trial will be "found unto praise, and honor, and glory, *at the appearance* of Jesus Christ" (1Pet. 1:5-7).

An untried faith is a dead faith, being alone. Faith without trial finds no scope for demonstration, or evidence of its existence. Thus, it is written, "faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. 'Yea,' a man may say, 'thou hast faith, and I have works:' *show* me thy faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith *by my works*. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well; the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know; O vain man, that faith, without works is dead? Was not

Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and *by works was faith made perfect*. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and NOT *by faith ALONE*" (Jas. 2:17-24). "Without faith," says Paul, "it is impossible to please God;" and it is also apparent from James' testimony just recited, that the faith with which He is pleased, is a faith that is made manifest by works; of which Noah, Abraham, Job, and Jesus, are pre-eminent examples.

Now, this "precious faith" can only be educed by trial; for the trial elaborates the works. This is the use of persecution, or tribulation, to believers; which in the divine economy is appointed for their refinement. Peter styles the "manifold persecutions," to which his brethren were subjected, "the trial of their faith;" and Paul testified to others of them, that "it is through much tribulation they must enter the kingdom." Probation is a refining process. It purges out a man's dross, and brings out the image of Christ in his character; and prepares him for exaltation to his throne" (Rev. 3:21). We can only enter the kingdom through the fire (1Cor. 3:13); but, if a man be courageous, and "hold fast the confidence and rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end," he will emerge from it unscorched; and be presented holy, unblameable, and unrebukeable (Col. 1:22-23) before the king.

A man cannot "honor God" more than in believing *what He promises*, and in doing what He commands; although to repudiate that belief, and to neglect, or disobey, those commands, should highly gratify all his senses, and place at his disposal the kingdoms of the world, and all their glory. Not to believe the promises of God is in effect to call God a liar; and no offence, even to men of integrity in the world, is so insulting and intolerable as this. "Let God be true," saith the scripture. His veracity must not be impeached in word or deed; if it be, then "judgment without mercy" is the "sorer punishment" which awaits the calumniator. The unswerving obedience of faith, is the "faith made perfect by works," tried by fire. God is pleased with this faith, because it honors Him. It is a working faith. There is life in it; and its exercise proves that the believer loves Him. Such a man it is God's delight to honor; and, though like Jesus he be for the present, "despised and rejected of men, a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief," the time will certainly come, when God will acknowledge him in the presence of the Elohim, and overwhelm his enemies with confusion of face.

Probation before exaltation, then, is upon the principle of *a faith in the promises of God, made precious by trial well sustained*. There is no

exemption from this ordeal. Even Christ himself was subjected to it. "By the grace of God he tasted death for every man. For it was fitting for God, that ... in bringing many sons to glory, He should make the Captain of their salvation *perfect through sufferings*. For in that he himself hath suffered *being put to the proof* (πειρασθεις), he is able to succour them who are tried" (Heb. 2:9-18). And "though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience *by the things which he suffered*: and being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation *unto all them that OBEY him*" (Heb. 5:8-9). He was first morally perfected through suffering; and then corporeally, by being "made into a spirit" by the spirit of holiness in his resurrection from the dead. I say, "morally perfected;" for, although he was without transgression, his perfection of character is predicated upon his "obedience unto death."

The probation of the Lord Jesus is an interesting and important study, especially that part of it styled, the Temptation of Satan. Paul, speaking of him as the High Priest under the New Constitution, says, "he was put to the proof in all things according to our likeness, without transgression" (Heb. 4:15); that is, "having taken hold of the seed of Abraham," "being found in fashion as a man," the infirmities of human nature were thus laid upon him. He could sympathize with them experimentally; being, by the feelings excited within him when enticed, well acquainted with all its weak points. By examining the narrative of his trial in the wilderness, we shall find that he was proved in all the assailable points of human nature. As soon as he was filled with the Spirit (Lk. 4:1) at his baptism in the Jordan, it immediately drove him (Mk. 1:12) into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil (Matt. 4:1). This was very remarkable. The spirit led him there that he might be put up to the proof; but not to tempt him; for, says the apostle, "let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evils, *neither tempteth He any man*" (Jas. 1:13). God, then, did not tempt Jesus; though His Spirit conducted him thither to be tempted, and that, too, "by the devil," or the enemy. This enemy within the human nature is the mind of the flesh, which is enmity against God; it is not subject to His law, neither indeed can be (Rom. 8:7). The commandment of God, which is "holy, just and good," being so restrictive of the propensities, which in purely animal men display themselves with uncontrolled violence, makes them appear in their true colors. These turbulent propensities the apostle styles "sin in the flesh," of which it is full; hence, he also terms it "sinful flesh." This is human nature; and the evil in it, made so apparent by the law of God, he personifies as "*pre-eminently A SINNER,*" καθ' υπερβολην αμαρτωλος (Rom. 7:12-13,

17-18). This is the accuser, adversary, and calumniator of God, whose strong hold is the flesh. It is the devil and satan within the human nature; so that "when a man is tempted, he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed." If a man examine himself, he will perceive within him something at work, craving after things which the law of God forbids. The best of men are conscious of this enemy within them. It troubled the apostle so much, that he exclaimed, "O, wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death" (Rom. 7:24), or this mortal body? He thanked God that the Lord Jesus Christ would do it; that is, as he had himself been delivered from it, by God raising him from the dead by His Spirit (Rom. 8:11).

Human nature, or "sinful flesh," has three principal channels through which it displays its waywardness against the law of God. These are expressed by "the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life." All that is in the world stands related to these points of our nature; and there is no temptation that can be devised, but what assails it in one, or more, of these three particulars. The world without is the seducer, which finds in all animal men, unsubdued by the law and testimony of God, a sympathizing and friendly principle, ready at all times to eat of its forbidden fruit. This sinful nature we inherit. It is our misfortune, not our crime, that we possess it. We are only blameworthy when, being supplied with the power of subduing it, we permit it to reign over us. This power resides in "the testimony of God" believed; so that we "are kept by the power of God *through faith* unto salvation" (1Pet. 1:5). This testimony ought to dwell in us as it dwelt in the Lord Jesus; so that, as with the shield of faith, the fiery assaults of the world may be quenched (Eph. 6:16) by a "thus it is written," and a "thus saith the Lord."

Jesus was prepared by the exhaustion of a long fast, for an appeal to the desire of his flesh for food. Hunger, it is said, will break through stone walls. "He was hungry." At this crisis, "the Tempter came to him." Who he was does not appear. Perhaps, Paul refers to him, saying, "Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light" (2Cor. 11:14). Some one came to him who was his adversary, and who desired his ruin; or, at least, acted the part of one on the same principle that the adversary was permitted to put the fidelity of Job to the proof. The trial of this eminent son of God, was perhaps recorded as an illustration of the temptation of the Son of God, even Jesus, to whom "there was none like in the earth, a perfect and upright man, one that feared God, and eschewed evil" (Job 1:8). From his birth to his baptism in the Jordan, he was faultless. But, in the words of Satan concerning Job, "did Jesus fear God for nought? Had

not God made a hedge about him?" Yes; God was his defence: and "in keeping His testimony there is great reward." But, the adversary calumniated Jesus, in suggesting that his obedience to God had been prompted by mercenary motives. He "feared" (Heb. 5:7), not simply for what he should get, but because of his love for his Father's character as revealed in the divine testimonies. The adversary affected to disbelieve this; and to suppose that, if God would just leave him in the position of any other man, he would distrust Him; and eat of the world's forbidden fruit, by embracing all it would afford him. Thus, the adversary may be supposed to have moved the Lord to permit him to put the fidelity of Jesus to the test. God, therefore, allowed the experiment to be tried; and by His spirit sent him into the wilderness for the purpose. So the adversary went forth from the presence of the Lord, and came to him there.

Having arrived at the crisis when Jesus was suffering from the keenest hunger, the adversary assumed the character of an angel, or messenger of light to him. Being acquainted with "the law and the testimony," for which he knew Jesus had a profound regard, he adduced it in support of his suggestions. He invited him to gratify the *cravings of the flesh* by helping himself. He was God's son; but then his Father seemed to have abandoned him; why not therefore use the power he possessed, whose presence in him was of itself a proof of God's approval of its exercise, and "command that the stones be made bread?" But Jesus disregarded the reasoning; and set it aside by "*it is written*, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God" (Deu. 8:3).

Failing in this, the scene of the temptation was then removed to "the pinnacle of the temple;" and, as Jesus fortified himself by the word, the adversary determined to be even with him; and in appealing to *the pride of life*, so strong in the nature laid upon him, to strengthen himself with the testimony likewise. "*If thou be the Son of God, as thou proudly assumest to be, cast thyself down: for it is written*, He shall give His angels charge concerning thee: and they shall bear thee up in their hands, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone" (Psa. 91:11-12). But Jesus met him with "Again, *it is written*, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God" (Deu. 6:16).

Lastly, the scene was shifted to a lofty mountain. From this position, by the power granted him, he showed Jesus "all the kingdoms of the world," visible from that elevation; "and the glory of them." He knew that Jesus was destined to possess them all; but that he was also to obtain them through suffering. Jesus knew this, too. Now, as the flesh dislikes suffering, the tempter proposed to gratify *the desire of his eyes* by giving

him all he saw on the easy condition of doing homage to him as the god of the world. "All this power, said he, will I give thee, and the glory of them; for that is delivered to me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine" (Lk. 4:6-7). But Jesus resisted the enticement; and said, "Get thee hence adversary: for *it is written*, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve." "Having ended all the temptation he departed from him *for a season*." "And Jesus returned in *the power* of the Spirit into Galilee." In this manner, then, was he put to the proof in all things according to the likeness of his nature to ours, but without transgression. He believed not this angel of light (Gal. 1:8-9) and power, and would have none of his favors. He preferred the grace of God with suffering, to the gratification of his flesh with all the pomp and pageantry of this vain and transitory world. Its "*glory*" is indeed delivered to the adversary of God, his people, and his truth; and to whomsoever he wills he gives it. The knowledge of this truth ought to deter every righteous man from seeking after it; or even accepting it, when offered upon conditions derogatory to the truth of God. And, if those who possess it, such as kings, priests, nobles, &c., were what they pretend to be, they would follow Jesus, and Paul's examples, and renounce them all. Christianity in high places, is Christ falling down before the adversary; and doing homage to him for the honor, riches, and power of the world. What fellowship hath Christ with Belial? Certainly none.

If the principles upon which the temptation of the Lord Jesus was permitted, be understood, the necessity of putting the first Adam to the proof will be readily perceived. Would he retain his integrity, if placed in a situation of trial? Or, would he disbelieve God and die? The Lord God well knew what the result would be; and had made all necessary provision for the altered circumstances, which He foresaw would arise. His knowledge, however, of what would be, did not necessitate it. He had placed all things in a *provisional state*. If the man maintained his integrity, there was the Tree of Lives as the germ of a superior order of things; but, if he transgressed, then the natural and animal system would continue unchanged; and the spiritualization of the earth and its population, be deferred to a future period.

God's knowledge of what a man's character will be, does not cause Him to exempt him from trial. He rewards and punishes none upon forgone conclusions. He does not say to this man, "I know you are certain to turn out a reprobate, therefore I will punish you for what you would do;" nor does He say to another, "I know thee that thou wouldst do well

all the days of thy life; therefore, I will promote thee to glory and honor, without subjecting thee to the tribulation of the world.” His principle is to recompense men according to what they *have done*, not for what they would do. Thus He dealt with the Two Adams; and with Israel: to whom Moses says, “the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thy heart, whether thou wouldest keep His commandments, or no” (Deu. 8:2). And thus also the Lord Jesus treated Judas. He knew he was a thief, and would betray him; yet he trusted him with the bag, and made no difference between him and the rest, until his character was revealed. The Lord knew what was in the heart of Israel, and whether they would obey Him; but He subjected them to such a trial as would cause them to reveal themselves in their true character, and thereby justify Him in His conduct towards them. With these remarks, then, by way of preface, I shall now proceed to the further exposition of things connected with this subject in the Mosaic account. And first of

### THE SERPENT.

“It was more subtle than any beast of the field.”

The Serpent was one of “the living things that moved upon the earth,” and which the Lord God pronounced “very good.” Moses says, it was more subtle, or shrewd, than any of the creatures the Lord God had made. It was, probably, because of this quality of shrewdness, or *quickness of perception*, that Adam named it *nachash*; which is rendered by *δρακων* in the New Testament, from *δερκω to see*; as, *δρακοντα τον οφιν τον αρχαιον, the Dragon, the old serpent* (Rev. 20:2). It was, doubtless, the chief of the serpent tribe, as it is styled “*the*” serpent; and, seeing that it was afterwards condemned to go upon its belly as a part of its sentence, it is probable, it was a winged-serpent in the beginning; fiery, but afterwards deprived of the power of flight, and made to move as at present.

Its subtlety, or quickness of perception by eye and ear, and skilfulness in the use of them (*πανουργια* – 2Cor. 11:3) was a part of the goodness of its nature. It was not an evil quality by any means; for Jesus exhorts his disciples to “be *wise* as the serpents; and unsophisticated (*ακεραλοι*) as the doves.” This quality of shrewdness, or instinctive wisdom, is that which principally strikes us in all that is said about it. It was an observant spectator of what was passing around it in the garden, since the Lord God had planted it eastward in Eden. It had seen the Lord God and His companion Elohim. He had heard their discourse. He was acquainted with the existence of the Tree of Knowledge, and the Tree of Lives; and knew

that the Lord God had forbidden Adam and his wife to eat of the good and evil fruit; or so much as to touch the tree. He was aware from what he had heard, that the Elohim knew what good and evil was experimentally; and that in this particular, Adam and Eve were not so wise as they. But, all this knowledge was shut up in his own cranium, from which it could never have made its exit, had not the Lord God bestowed upon it the power of expressing its thoughts in speech.

And what use should we naturally expect such a creature would make of this faculty? Such an one, certainly, as its cerebral constitution would enable it to manifest. It was an intellectual, but not a moral, creature. It had no "moral sentiments." No part of its brain was appropriated to the exercise of benevolence, veneration, conscientiousness, and so forth. To speak phrenologically, it was destitute of these organs; having only "intellectual faculties" and "propensities." Hence, its cerebral mechanism, under the excitation of external phenomena, would only develop, what I would term, *an animal intellectuality*. Moral, or spiritual, ideas would make no impression upon its mental constitution; for it was incapable from its formation of responding to them. It would be physically impossible for it to reason in harmony with the mind of God; or with the mind of a man, whose reasoning was regulated by divinely enlightened moral sentiments. Its wisdom would be that of the untutored savage race, whose "sentiments" by the desuetude of ages, had become as nothing. In short, we should expect that, if the faculty of speech were bestowed upon it, it would make just such a use of it, as Moses narrates of the serpent in the garden of Eden. Its mind was purely and emphatically a "Carnal Mind," of a more shrewd description than that of any of the inferior creatures. It was "very good;" but, when he undertook to converse upon things too high for him; to speak of what he had seen and heard; and to comment upon the law of the Lord, he lost himself in his dialogisms, and became *the inventor of a lie*.

Thus prepared, he commenced a conversation with the woman. "Yea," said he, as though he were familiar with the saying, "hath God said, Ye shall not eat of *every* tree of the garden?" In this manner he spoke, as if he had been pondering over the matter to find out the meaning of things; but, not being able to make anything of it, he invited her attention inquiringly. She replied, "we may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: but of the fruit of the tree in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die." This was enunciating "the law of the spirit of life," or *the truth*; for "the law of God is the truth" (Psa. 119:142). Had she adhered to the letter of this, she would have been safe.

But, the Serpent began to intellectualize; and in so doing, “abode not in the truth; because there was no truth in him. When he may be speaking the falsehood (*οταν λαλη το ψευδος*) he speaks out of his own” (Jn. 8:44) reasonings (*εκ των ιδιων λαλει*). He could not comprehend the moral obligation necessitating obedience to the divine law; for there was nothing in him that responded to it. Hence, says Jesus, “there was no truth in him.” This, however, was not the case with Eve. There was truth in her; but she also began to intellectualize at the suggestion of the Serpent; and from his reasonings to doubt, and finally to conclude, that the Lord God *did not mean exactly what He said*. This was an error of which all the world is guilty to this day. It admits that God has spoken; that He has promulgated laws; that He has made promises; and that He has said, “he that believeth the gospel, and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be condemned.” All this professors admit in theory; while, as in the case of Eve, in practice they deny it. They say He is too kind, too loving, too merciful, to act according to a rigid construction of the word; for if He did, multitudes of the good and pious, and excellent of the earth, would be condemned. This is doubtless true. Sceptics, however, of this class should remember, that they only are “the salt of the earth,” who delight in the law of the Lord, *and do it*. Every sect has its “good and pious” ones, who are thought little or nothing of by adverse denominations. The law of God is the only true standard of goodness and piety; and men may depend upon it, attested by the examples in scripture, that they who treat Him as not meaning exactly what He says in His word, “make God a liar” (1Jn. 5:10), and are anything but good or pious in His esteem.

Eve having repeated the law in the hearing of the Serpent, he remarked that *they should not surely die*: “for,” said he, “God doth know, that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.” The falsehood of this assertion consisted in the declaration, “Ye shall not surely die,” when God had said, “dying ye shall die.” It was truth that God did know that in the day of their eating *their eyes would be opened*; and it was also true, that they should then become *as the Elohim*, in the sense of *knowing good and evil*. This appears from the testimony of Moses, that when they had eaten “the eyes of them both were opened” (Gen. 3:7); and from the admission of God Himself, who said, “Behold, the man is become like one of us, to know good and evil” (Gen. 3:22). The Serpent’s declaration was therefore an admixture of truth and falsehood; which so blended itself with what Eve knew to exist, that “she was beguiled by his shrewdness” from the simplicity of the law of God.

But, how did the Serpent know, that the Lord God knew that these things would happen to them in the day of their eating? How came he to know anything about the gods, and their acquaintance with good and evil? And upon what grounds did he affirm they should not surely die? The answer is, by one of two ways — by *inspiration*; or, by *observation*. If we say by inspiration, then we make God the author of the lie; but if we affirm, that he obtained his knowledge by observation — by the use of his eyes and ears upon things transpiring around him — then we confirm the words of Moses, that he was the shrewdest of the creatures the Lord God had made. “Hath God said, Ye shall not eat of *every* tree?” This question shows that he was aware of some exceptions. He had heard of the Tree of Knowledge and of the Tree of Lives, which were both in the midst of the garden. He had heard the Lord Elohim, and the other Elohim, conversing on their own experience of good and evil; and, of the enlightenment of the man and woman in the same qualities through the eating of the Tree of Knowledge and of their living for ever, if obedient, by eating of the Tree of Life. In reasoning upon these things, he concluded that, if they did eat of the forbidden fruit, they would not surely die; for they would have nothing more to do than to go and eat of the Tree of Life, and it would prevent all fatal consequences. Therefore he said, “Ye shall not surely die.” The Lord God, it is evident, was apprehensive of the effect of this reasoning upon the mind of Adam and his wife; for He forthwith expelled them from the garden, to prevent all possibility of access to the tree, lest they should eat, and put on immortality in sin.

The reasoning of the Serpent operated upon the woman by exciting the lust of her flesh, the lust of her eyes, and the pride of life. This appears from the testimony. An appetite, or longing for it, that she might eat it, was created within her. The fruit also was very beautiful. It hung upon the tree in a very attractive and inviting manner. “She saw that it was *good for food*, and that it was *pleasant to the eyes*.” But, there was a greater inducement still than even this. The flesh and the eyes would soon be satisfied. Her pride of life had been aroused by the suggestion, that by eating it their eyes would be opened; and that she would be “made wise” as the glorious Elohim, she had so often seen in the garden. To become “as the gods;” to know good and evil as they knew it — was a consideration too cogent to be resisted. She not only saw that it was good for food, and pleasant to the eyes, but that it was “a tree to be desired as making one wise” as the gods; therefore “she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat.” Thus, as far as she was concerned, the transgression was complete.

**THE NATURE OF THE TRANSGRESSION.**

“The eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked.”

The effect produced upon the woman by the eating of the forbidden fruit, was the excitation of the propensities. By the transgression of the law of God, she had placed herself in *a state of sin*; in which she had acquired that maturity of feeling, which is known to exist when females attain to womanhood. The Serpent's part had been performed in her deception; and sorely was she deceived. Expecting to be equal to the gods, the hitherto latent passions of her animal nature only were set free; and though she now knew what evil sensations and impulses were, as they had done before her, she had failed in attaining to the pride of her life — and equality with them as she had seen them in their power and glory.

In this state of animal excitation, she presented herself before the man, with the fruit so “pleasant to the eyes.” Standing now in his presence she became the tempter, soliciting him to sin. She became to him an “evil woman flattering with her tongue;” “whose lips dropped as a honeycomb, and her mouth was smoother than oil.” She found him “a young man void of understanding” like herself. We can imagine how “she caught him; and kissed him; and with an impudent face, and her much fair speech, she caused him to yield.” He accepted the fatal fruit, “and eat with her,” consenting to her enticement, “not knowing that it was for his life;” though God had said, transgression should surely be punished with death. As yet inexperienced in the certainty of the literal execution of the divine law, and depending upon the remedial efficacy of the Tree of Lives, he did not believe that he should *surely die*. He saw every thing delightful around him, and his beautiful companion with the tempting fruit; and yet he was told that his eyes were shut! What wonderful things might he not see if his eyes were opened. And to be “as the gods” too, “knowing good and evil,” was not this a wisdom much to be desired? The fair deceiver had, at length, succeeded in kindling in the man the same lusts that had taken possession of herself. His flesh, his eyes and his pride of life, were all inflamed; and he followed in her evil way “as a fool to the correction of the stocks.” They had both fallen into unbelief. They did not believe God would do what He had promised. This was a fatal mistake. They afterwards found by experience, that in their sin they had charged God falsely; and that what He promises, He will certainly perform to the letter of His word. Thus, unbelief prepared them for disobedience; and disobedience separated them from God.

As the Mosaic narrative gives an account of *things natural*, upon which *things spiritual* were afterwards to be established in word and substance; the key to his testimony is found in *what actually exists*. When, therefore, he tells us that the eyes of Adam and Eve were closed at first, in that he says they were opened by sin, we have to examine ourselves as natural beings for the meaning of his words. Moses, indeed, informs us in what sense, or to what phenomena, their eyes were closed, in saying, “they were both naked, the man and his wife, and they were not ashamed.” If their eyes had been surreptitiously opened, they would have been ashamed of standing before the Lord Elohim in a state of nudity; and they would have had emotions towards one another, which would have been inconvenient. But, in their unsinning ignorance of the latent propensities of their nature, shame, which makes the subject of it feel as though he would hide himself in a nutshell, and be buried in the depths of the sea, found no place within them. They were unabashed; and had they been created with their eyes open, they would have been equally so at all times. But, seeing that their eyes were opened in connection with, and as the consequence of doing what was forbidden, having “yielded their members servants to uncleanness, and to iniquity unto iniquity;” and their superior faculties being constituted susceptible of the feeling, they were ashamed; and “the uncomely parts of the body” became “their shame;” and from that time have been esteemed dishonorable, and invariably “hid.” The inferior creatures have no such feeling as this; because they have never sinned: but *the parents of Cain*, in their transgression, having served themselves of the members they afterwards concealed, were deeply affected both with shame and fear; and their posterity have ever since more or less partaken of it after the same form.

Having transgressed the divine law, and “solaced themselves with loves,” “the eyes of them both were opened” as the consequence; and when opened, “they *knew* that they were naked,” which they did not comprehend before. “By the law is the knowledge of sin,” and “sin is the transgression of law;” so, having transgressed the law, “they knew they were naked” without waiting for the Lord to reveal it to them, and to permit them the lawful use of one another in His own time. They were quite chagrined at the discovery they had made; and sought to mitigate it by a contrivance of their own: so “they sewed fig-leaves together, and made themselves aprons.”

Although thus corporeally defended from mutual observation, the nakedness of their minds was still exposed. They heard the voice of the Elohim, which had now become terrible; and they hid themselves from

His presence amongst the trees. They had not yet learned, however, that the Lord was not only a God at hand, but a God also afar off; and that none can hide in secret places, and He not see them; for He fills both the heaven and the earth (Jer. 23:23-24). Their concealment was ineffectual against the voice of the Lord, who called out to him, "Where art thou Adam?" And he answered, "I heard thy voice in the garden, and *I was afraid, because I was naked*; and I hid myself." Adam's heart condemned him, therefore he lost his confidence before God (1Jn. 3:19-22).

### A GOOD, AND AN EVIL, CONSCIENCE.

The reader, by contemplating Adam and Eve in innocence, and afterwards in guilt, will perceive in the facts of their case, the nature of a *good conscience*, and of an evil one. When they rejoiced in "the answer of a good conscience," they were destitute of shame and fear. They could stand naked in God's presence unabashed; and, instead of trembling at His voice, they rejoiced to hear it as the harbinger of good things. It was then pure and undefiled, being devoid of all conscience of sin. They were then of the truth, living in obedience to it as expressed in the law; and therefore their hearts were assured before Him. No doubts and fears oppressed them then. But mark the change that afterwards came over them. When they lost their good conscience, terror seized upon them at the voice of God, and shame possessed their souls; and they sought to get out of His sight, and to remove as far from Him as possible. Now, what was the cause of this? There is but one answer that can be given, and that is — SIN.

Sin, then, takes away "the answer of a good conscience towards God," and converts it into an evil conscience; which may be certainly known to exist, when the subject of it is *ashamed* of the truth, and harassed by "doubt and fears." They are ashamed of the truth, who, being enlightened, feel themselves condemned; or, being ignorant, apprehend it. Such, on account of unbelief, or of "a dead faith," may well be ashamed and afraid; for to be ashamed of God's truth is to be ashamed of His wisdom and power. People of this description proscribe all conversation about the truth as unfashionable, and vulgar; or as calculated to disturb the peace of the family circle: others again, make a great outcry against controversy as dangerous to religion; as though God's truth could be planted in the hearts of men, already prepossessed by God's enemy, without controversy: others subjected to the timidity of sin, reduce every thing to opinion, and inculcate "charity;" not that they are more liberal and kind than other people; but that they fear lest their own nakedness may be discovered, and

“men see their shame:” while another class of bashful professors, cry out, “disturb not that which is quiet,” which is a capital maxim for a rotten cause, especially where its subversion would break up all “vested interests,” and pecuniary emoluments. So it is; while “the righteous are bold as a lion, the wicked flee when no man pursueth.” Sinners, however “pious” they may be reputed to be, are invariably cowards; they are ashamed of a bold stand for their own *profession*; and afraid of an independent and impartial examination of the law and testimony of God.

Understanding then, that *sin*, or the transgression of God’s law, evinced by doubts, fears, and shamefacedness, is *the morbid principle* of an evil conscience, what is the obvious indication to be fulfilled in its removal? The answer is, *blot out the sin*, and the conscience of the patient will be cured. The morbid phenomena will disappear, and “the answer of a good conscience toward God” (1Pet. 3:21) remain. From the nature of things, it is obvious, that the sinner cannot cure himself; though superstition has taught him to attempt it by fastings, and penances, and all “the voluntary humility and vain deceit,” inculcated by “the blind.” Adam and Eve vainly imagined they could *cover their own sin*, and efface it from divine scrutiny; but the very clumsy device they contrived, betrayed the defilement of their consciences. Their posterity have not learned wisdom by the failure of their endeavor; but, to this day, they are as industriously engaged in inventing cloaks for their evil consciences, as were their first parents, when stitching fig-leaves together to cover their shame. So true is it that, though God made man upright, he hath sought out many inventions (Ecc. 7:29). But, after all the patching, and altering, and scouring, they are but like “the filthy garments” taken from the high priest, Joshua (Zech. 3:3-4); to which all the iniquity laid upon him, adhered with the inveteracy of a leprous plague.

Men have not yet learned the lesson, that all they are called upon by God to do, is to *believe His word and obey His laws*. He requires nothing more at their hands than this. If they neither believe nor do; or, believe, but do not obey, they are evil doers, and at enmity with Him. He asks men for actions, not words; for He will judge them “according to their works” in the light of His law; and not according to their suppositious feelings, and traditions. The reason why He will not permit men to prescribe for their own moral evils, is, because He is the physician, they the lepers; He their sovereign, they the rebels against His law. It is His prerogative, and His alone, to dictate the terms of reconciliation. Man has offended God. It becomes him, therefore, to surrender unconditionally; and, with the humility and teachableness of a child, to receive with open heart, and

#### THE CARNAL MIND

grateful feelings, whatever in the wisdom, and justice, and benevolence of God, He may condescend to prescribe. Until they do this, they may preach in His name (Matt. 7:21, 23); make broad their phylacteries (Matt. 23:5-7); sound trumpets in the synagogues and in the streets (Matt. 6:1-4); make long prayers in public (Matt. 6:5-7; 23:14); disfigure their countenances with grimace that they may appear to fast (Matt. 6:16-18); build churches; compass sea and land to make proselytes (Matt. 23:15); found hospitals; and fill the world with their benevolencies: — all is reducible to mere fig-leaf invention as a substitute for “the righteousness of God.” “Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose *sins are covered*” (Rom. 4:7); but this blessedness came not upon Adam, nor upon any of his posterity, by garments of their own device. The Lord’s covering for sin is “a change of raiment,” even “white raiment,” which He counsels men to buy, “that they may be clothed, and that the shame of their nakedness do not appear” (Rev. 3:18). He alone can furnish it. His price is that men should believe, and put it on.

#### THE CARNAL MIND.

“The thinking of the flesh is enmity against God.”

When the Lord God bestowed the faculty of speech upon the Serpent, He enabled it to give utterance to its thoughts. The possession of this power did not, however, confer upon it moral accountability. This depends on a different constitution of “the flesh.” Where no “moral sentiments” exist as a part of “the flesh,” or brain, there is no *ability* in the creature to *render an account* for its aberrations from the requirements of moral, or spiritual, institutions. Speech only enabled it to utter the thinkings of its unsentimentalized intellect. It spoke like Balaam’s ass, under the impulse of the sensations excited by what it had seen and heard. The thinkings of its flesh could not ascend to faith, being destitute of the organic ability to believe; therefore its speech could express only fleshly thoughts. Faith was too high an attainment for it. The light of God’s law could not shine into it. Like all the inferior animals, it was a creature of mere sensation; and could utter only sentences formed of combinations resulting from the impressions of sensible objects transmitted to its sensorium by the five senses; it transcended them, however, in being more observant and reasoning than they.

What it *had done*, and not what it *intended* to do, was made the ground of the Serpent’s condemnation. “*Because thou hast done this*,” said the

Lord God, “thou art cursed above all cattle, &c.” It was incapable of moral intention. It did not intend to deceive; but it did deceive; therefore, it was a deceiver. It did not intend to lie; but it did lie; therefore, it was a liar and the father of a lie. It did not intend to cause the woman’s death; but still it brought her under sentence of death; therefore, it was a murderer: and became the spiritual father of all intentional liars, deceivers, unbelievers, and man-killers, who are styled “the Serpent’s seed.”

The Serpent had propensities and intellect, and so had the woman; but her mental constitution differed from his, in having “moral sentiments” superadded to her propensities and intellect. By the sentiments she was made a morally accountable being; capable of believing, and able to control and direct her other faculties in their application. The propensities enable a creature to propagate its species, take care of its young, defend itself against enemies, collect food, and so forth: *intellect* enables it to do these things, for the gratification of its sensations; but when, in addition to these, a being is endowed with the sentiments of conscientiousness, hope, veneration, benevolence, wonder, &c., it possesses a spiritual, or sentimental, organization, which makes it capable of reflecting as from a mirror, the likeness and glory of God. The appropriate sphere of the propensities is on things sensual and fleshly; while that of spiritual, or sentimentalized, intellect, is on “the things of the spirit of God.” In the mental constitution of man, God designed that the sentiments, *enlightened by His truth*, should have the ascendancy, and preside over, and govern his actions. Under such an arrangement, the thoughts of the man would have resulted from spiritual thinking as opposed to the thoughts of the inferior creatures, which are purely the thinking of the flesh. Where the truth has possession of the sentiments, setting them to work and so forming the thoughts, it becomes the law of God to them; which the apostle styles “*the law of his mind*;” and because it is written there through the hearing of “the law and the testimony,” which came to the prophets and apostles through the spirit, he terms it, “*the law of the spirit*” (Rom. 7:23; 8:2) inscribed “on fleshly tables of the heart” (2Cor. 3:3); and “the law of the spirit of life,” because, while obeyed, it confers a right to eternal life.

But in the absence of this law and testimony, the “moral sentiments” are as incapable of directing a man aright, as though he were all intellect, or all propensities. By a right direction, I mean, according to the mind of God. The sentiments are as blind as the propensities when intellect is unenlightened by divine revelation. The truth of this is illustrated by the excesses into which mankind has plunged in the name of religion. Mohammedanism, Romanism, Paganism, and the infinite varieties of

Protestantism, are all the result of the co-workings of the intellect, and sentiments, under the impulse of the propensities. They are all the thinkings of the flesh, predicated on ignorance, or misconception, of the truth. Hence, they are either altogether false; or, like the dialogisms of the shrewd Serpent, a clumsy mixture of truth and error.

The *Carnal Mind* is an expression used by Paul; or rather, it is the translation of words used by him, in his epistle to the Romans. It is not so explicit as the original. The words he wrote are *το φρονημα της σαρκος* *the thinking of the flesh*. In this phrase, he intimates to us, that *the flesh is the thinking substance*, that is, the brain; which, in another place, he terms "*the fleshly tablet of the heart*." The kind of thinking, therefore, depends upon the conformation of this organ. Hence, the more elaborate and perfect its mechanism, the more precise and comprehensive the thought; and *vice versa*. It is upon this principle such a diversity of mental manifestation is observable among men and other animals; but after all, how diverse soever they may be, they are all referable to one and the same thing — *the thinking of the flesh, whose elaborations are excited by the propensities, and the sensible phenomena of the world*.

Now, the law of God is given, that the thinking of the flesh, instead of being excited by the propensities within, and the world without, may be conducted according to its direction. So long as Adam and Eve yielded to its guidance, they were happy and contented. Their thoughts were the result of right thinking, and obedience was the consequence. But when they adopted the Serpent's reasonings as their own, these being at variance with the truth, caused an "enmity" against it in their thinkings, which is equivalent to "enmity against God." When their sin was perfected, the propensities, or lusts, having been inflamed, became "*a law in their members*;" and because it was implanted in their flesh by transgression, it is styled, "the law of sin;" and death being the wages of sin, it is also termed, "the law of sin and death;" but by philosophy, "the law of nature."

The thinking of the flesh, uninfluenced by the ameliorating agency of divine truth, is so degenerating in its effects, that it reduces man to savagism. There is nothing elevating or ennobling in fleshly thoughts; on the contrary, they tend to physical deterioration and death; for "to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace" (Rom. 8:6). If ferocious creatures become tame, or civilized, it is the result of what may be termed spiritual influences; which, operating from without the animal, call into exercise its higher powers, by which the more turbulent are subdued, or kept in check. It is unheard of that wild beasts, or savage men, ever tamed or civilized themselves; on the contrary, the

law in the members when uncontrolled in its mental operations is so vicious in its influence as to endanger the continuance of the race. If, therefore, God had abandoned Adam and his posterity to the sole guidance of the newly developed propensities, the earth would long ere this have been peopled by a population not a whit above the aborigines of New Holland, or the Ghelanes of Africa. Notwithstanding, the antagonism established between His law and the flesh, by which a wholesome conflict has been maintained in the world, a vast proportion of its people are “blind of heart” and “past feeling,” in consequence of their intellect and sentiments having fallen into moral desuetude; or of being exercised upon the reasonings of the flesh, as were Eve’s upon the speculations of the Serpent.

The unilluminated thinking of the flesh gives birth to the “works of the flesh; which are, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, dissensions, sects, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like” (Gal. 5:19). Unchecked by the truth and judgments of God, the world would have been composed solely of such characters. Indeed, notwithstanding all His interference to save it from the ruinous consequences of its vicious enmity against His law, it seems to have attained a state of immorality in the apostolic age well nigh to reprobation. “They were,” says the apostle, “without excuse; because that when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became *vain in their imaginations*, and *their foolish heart was darkened*. Professing themselves to be wise (or philosophers) they became fools, and changed the glory of the Incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible men, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also *gave them up* to uncleanness *through the lusts of their own hearts*, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves: who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. For this cause, God gave them up unto vile affections; working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, *God gave them over to a reprobate mind* to do those things which are not convenient; being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable,

unmerciful" (Rom. 1:20-31).

Such is the carnal mind, or thinking of the flesh, as illustrated by the works of the flesh: a hideous deformity, whose conception is referable to the infidelity and disobedience of our first parents; by whom "sin entered into the world and death by sin" (Rom. 5:12). It is *the serpent mind*; because, it was through his untruthful reasonings believed, that a like mode of thinking to his was generated in the heart of Eve and her husband. The seed sown there by the Serpent was corruptible seed. Hence the carnal mind, or thinking of the flesh, unenlightened by the truth, is *the serpent in the flesh*. It was for this reason, that Jesus styled his enemies, "serpents, and a generation of vipers" (Matt. 23:33). Their actions all emanated from the serpent-thinking of the flesh, which displayed "a wisdom not from above," which was at once "earthly, sensual, and devilish;" as opposed to that which "is from above," and which is "*first pure, then peaceable, gentle and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy*" (Jas. 3:15, 17).

The carnal mind, or serpent in the flesh, is the subject of a two-fold manifestation, namely, *individually* and *collectively*. An individual manifestation is more or less observable in persons who "mind the things of the flesh," or "earthly things" (Rom. 8:5; Phil. 3:18-19; Col. 3:2; 1Jn. 2:15). To do this is to be "*after the flesh*," and "*in the flesh*;" of whom, it is testified, "they cannot please God." By a figure, *sin is put for the serpent*, the effect for the cause; seeing that he was *the suggester* of unbelief and disobedience to man, by whom it entered into the world. Hence, the idea of the serpent in the flesh is expressed by "sin in the flesh;" which was "condemned in the flesh" when Jesus was crucified for, or, on account of sin, "in the likeness of sinful flesh." In the animal man there dwelleth no good thing. The apostle affirms this of himself, considered as an unenlightened son of the flesh. "In me, that is, in my flesh," says he, "dwelleth no good thing." Hence, whatever good was in him, did not originate from the thinking of the flesh excited by the propensities, and traditions of Gamaliel; but from "the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus;" that is, from the influence of "the testimony of God," concerning "the things of the kingdom, and name of Jesus Christ," upon "the fleshly tablet of his heart," most assuredly believed. Submission to this "made me free," says he, "from the law of sin and death." This attests the truth of the Lord's saying, that "if the truth made a man free, he should be free indeed." Sin, though still in the flesh, should no more reign in his mortal body, nor have dominion over him.

If it were not for the law, or truth, of God, we should not know what

sin is; for, says the apostle, “I had not known sin, but by the law;” “for without the law, *sin is dead*.” If a man committed theft, or adultery, or any other thing, he would not know whether he did right or wrong in God’s esteem, if God had not said, they shall not be done. The lower animals steal, kill, and obey their propensities uncontrolled; but, in so doing, they do not sin, because God has made them with the ability and disposition so to do, and has not forbidden them. *Wrong* consists not in any particular act of which we are capable; but in that act being contrary to the letter and spirit of the divine testimony: in other words, *right* is the doing of the will of God. Hence, if we saw a man bowing down before an image of the Virgin Mary, which is death by His law, and He commanded us to kill him, we should do wrong to refuse, although He has said, “Thou shalt not kill.” Men have lost sight of this truth. They know not, or seem not to know, that the only true standard of right and wrong, truth and error, is the divine law. Hence, they inflict upon themselves and one another, all sorts of pains and penalties, making their lives miserable, because of nonconformity to standards of faith and morals, which know no other paternity than the serpent-thinking of sinful flesh.

Sin was in the world from the fall to the giving of the law through Moses. But it did not appear to be sin to those who obeyed its impulses; because, there being no law such as the Mosaic, “the sons of God” did not know when they might have erred. They were not held accountable to any future retribution for doing things, which under Moses’ law were punishable with death. They were amenable only to “the way of the Lord,” even as the disciples of Jesus are at this day. This required them to walk by faith in the nurture and admonition of the Lord, whose love was shed abroad in their hearts by the testimony they believed (Rom. 5:13).

The Serpent in the flesh shows itself in individuals in all the colors of its skin. It manifests itself in all the deceptions men practice upon themselves and one another. Its most insidious and dangerous manifestations emanate from the pulpit, and ecclesiastical thrones. In these, the Serpent presents himself to mankind, presumptuously entertaining them with things he does not understand. From thence he delights them with the assurance of wisdom upon principles in harmony with their nature. “God doth not mean,” saith he, “exactly what He says. Trouble not your consciences about the letter of His word. He knows, that the circumstances in which you are placed prevent a rigid construction of it. Besides, the times are changed, and the world is better than it used to be. He takes the will for the deed. The spirit is everything; the letter is nothing; for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life. Eat, then, and drink,

and be merry. Be diligent in business, fervent in the cause of your church, serving your clergy; and when you die, ye shall be as gods in the elysian fields!"

But, the serpent in the flesh manifests itself in *all* the high places of the earth. It obtrudes itself upon all occasions, and through all the channels of human life. Popes, cardinals, and priests; bishops, ministers, and deacons; emperors, kings, and presidents; with all who sustain them, and execute their behests, are but the fleshly media through which the thinking of the flesh finds expression. They are "the high things that exalt themselves against *the knowledge* of God," which are to be cast down (2Cor. 10:5). They are faithless of this knowledge, which they make of none effect by their traditions; and "whatsoever is not of faith is sin." My business will be to show what this knowledge is; and, if it be found, that I speak not according to "the law and the testimony," it will be because there is no light in me; and that like them, I speak my own thought as of the flesh, and not according to the gospel of the kingdom of God.

As I have remarked before, *sin* is personified by Paul as "pre-eminently *a sinner*;" and by another apostle, as "the Wicked One" (1Jn. 3:12). In this text, he says, "Cain was of that Wicked One, and slew his brother." There is precision in this language which is not to be disregarded in the interpretation. Cain was of that Wicked One; that is, he was a *son of sin* — of the serpent-sin, or original transgression. The Mosaic narrative of facts is interrupted at the end of the sixth verse of the third chapter. The fact passed over there, though implied in the seventh verse, is plainly stated in the first verse of the third chapter. These texts conjoined read thus: "and Eve gave unto her husband, and he did eat with her. And Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked." Now, here was a conception in sin, the originator of which was the Serpent. When therefore, in the "set time" afterwards, "Eve bare Cain," though procreated by Adam, he was of the Serpent, seeing that he suggested the transgression which ended in the conception of Cain. In this way, sin in the flesh being put for the Serpent, Cain was of that Wicked One, the pre-eminent sinner, and the first-born of the Serpent's seed.

Now, they who do the works of the flesh, are the children of the Wicked One, or of sin in the flesh; on the like principle that those Jews only were the children of Abraham, who did the works of Abraham. But, they did not the deeds of Abraham, but evil deeds. They were liars, hypocrites, and murderers; therefore, said Jesus, "Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye are willing to do. He was a murderer

from the beginning, and stood not in the truth, because there is no truth in him” (Jn. 8:39, 44). We have seen in what sense this is affirmed of the Serpent, the unaccountable and irresponsible author of sin. Every son of Adam is “conceived in sin and shapen in iniquity,” and therefore “sinful flesh;” on the principle, that “what is born of the flesh is flesh.” If he obey the impulses of his flesh, he is like Cain, “of the Wicked One;” but, if he believe the “exceeding great and precious promises of God,” obey the law of faith, and put to death unlawful obedience to his propensities, he becomes a son of the living God, and a brother and joint-heir of the Lord Jesus Christ of the glory to be revealed in the last time.

But, serpent-sin, being a constituent of human nature, is treated of in the scripture in the aggregate, as well as in its individual manifestations. The “lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life,” generated in our nature by sin, and displayed in all the children of sin, taken in the aggregate constitute “*the world*,” which stands opposed to God. Serpent-sin in the flesh, is the god of the world, who possesses the glory of it. Hence, to overcome the world is to overcome the Wicked One; because sin finds its expression in the things of the world. These things are the civil and ecclesiastical polities, and social institutions of the nations; which are all based upon “the wisdom that descendeth not from above” — the serpent wisdom of the flesh. If this be admitted, it is easy to appreciate the full force of the saying, “the friendship of the world is enmity against God” (Jas. 4:4). Let no one, then, who would have God’s favor, seek the honor and glory of the world in *Church* or State; for promotion in either of them, can only be attained by sacrificing the principles of God’s truth upon the altar of popular favor, or of princely patronage. Let no man envy men in place and power. It is their misfortune and will be their ruin; and though many of them profess to be very pious, and to have great zeal for religion; yea, zeal as flaming as the scribes and pharisees of old, they are in friendship with the world, which in return heaps upon them its riches, and honor, and therefore they are the enemies of God. It is unnecessary to indicate them in detail. If the reader understand the scripture, he can easily discern them. Wherever the gospel of the kingdom is supplanted by sectarian theology, there is a strong hold of “the carnal mind, which is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be” (Rom. 8:7). This is a rule to which there is no exception; and the grand secret of that formality, coldness, and spiritual death, which are said to paralyze “the churches.” They are rich in all things, but *the truth*; and of that there is a worse than Egyptian scarcity.

## THE PRINCE OF THE WORLD.

"The prince of this world shall be cast out."

Sin made flesh, whose character is revealed in the works of the flesh, is the Wicked One of the world. He is styled by Jesus, *ο αρχων του κοσμου τουτου*, the Prince of this world. *Kosmos*, rendered world in this phrase, signifies, that *order of things* constituted upon the basis of sin in the flesh, and styled *the kingdom of Satan* (Matt. 12:26), as opposed to the kingdom of God: which is to be established upon the foundation of the "word made flesh" obedient unto death. Incarnated sin, and incarnated obedience, are the bases of the two hostile kingdoms of God, and of the adversary. The world is Satan's kingdom; therefore it is, that "the saints," or people of God, both Israelites outwardly (Rom. 2:28-29; 9:6-7) and "Israelites indeed" (Jn. 1:47), are a dispersed and persecuted community. Satan's kingdom is the kingdom of sin. It is a kingdom in which "sin reigns in the mortal body," and thus has dominion over men. It is quite fabulous to locate it in a region of ghosts and hobgoblins, remote from, or under the earth, where Pluto reigns as "God of Hell." This notion is a part of the wisdom of those fleshly thinkers, who, as the apostle says, "professing themselves to be wise, became fools;" a wisdom, too, which "God hath made foolishness" (1 Cor. 1:19-20) by "the light of the glorious gospel of Christ" (2 Cor. 4:3-4, 6). The kingdom of sin is among the living upon the earth; and it is called the kingdom of Satan, because "all the power of the enemy," or adversary, of God and His people, is concentrated and incarnated in it. It is a kingdom teeming with religion, or rather, forms of superstition, all of which have sprung from the thinking of sinful flesh. This is the reason why men hate, or neglect, or disparage, the Bible. If the leaders of the people were to speak honestly they would confess that they did not understand it. Their systems of divinity are the untoward thinkings of sinful flesh; and they know that they cannot interpret the Bible intelligibly according to their principles. At all events they have not yet accomplished it. Hence, one class have forbidden their people the use of the scriptures at all, and have placed it among prohibited books. Another class advocates them, not because it walks by the light of them, but because they hate the tyranny of Rome. These, in their public exhibitions, substitute their sermonizings for "reasoning out of the scriptures," and "expounding out of the law of Moses and the Prophets" (Acts 28:23, 31). Thus they neglect the Bible, or use it only as a book of maxims and mottoes for their sermons; which for the most part have as much to do with the subject treated of in the text, as with the science of gymnastics,

or perpetual motion. But the carnal policy does not end here. The neglect of the preachers might be supplied by the searching of the scriptures by the people themselves. But this is discouraged by disparagements from the pulpit. The word is proclaimed to be “a dead letter;” the prophecies are said to be unintelligible; the apocalypse incomprehensible, and utterly bewildering; that it is necessary to go to college to study divinity before it can be *judiciously* explained; and so forth. The people, for whom I write know this to be the truth. But, what is the english of all this? It is, that the pulpit orators and newspaper scribes, are consciously ignorant of “the sure word of prophecy;” so that, in order to maintain their ascendancy, they must repress the enterprise of the people, lest they should become “wiser than their teachers;” and find that they could do infinitely better without their services than with them, and thus their occupation would be gone. As for a college education in divinity qualifying boys for “*preaching the word*,” the absurdity of the conceit is manifest in the fact, that the “college-bred divines” are all at variance among themselves upon its meaning. Call a convention of priests and preachers of all religious sects and parties, and assign to them the work of publishing a scriptural and *unanimous* reply to the simple question, *what do the scriptures teach as the measure of faith, and rule of conduct, to him who would inherit the kingdom?* Let it be such a reply as would stand the scrutiny of deep and earnest investigation — and what does the reader expect would be the result? Would their knowledge of all the languages living and dead; of Euclid’s Elements; of Ligori, Bellarmine, Luther, Calvin, and Arminius; of the mythologies of the Greeks and Romans; of all the creeds, confessions, catechisms, and articles of “Christendom;” of logic, ancient and modern; of the art of sermonizing; and of all religious controversies extant: — would their acquaintance with such lore as this bring them to unanimity; and cause them to manifest themselves as “workmen that need not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth?” What can we reason upon this point, but from what we know? Experience, then, teaches us, that their performance of such a thing, so simple and easy in itself, would be utterly impracticable; for “the thinking of the flesh is enmity against God;” and until they throw away their traditions, and study the word, which is very different to “studying divinity,” they will continue as they are, perhaps unconsciously, the perverters and enemies of the truth.

The kingdom of Satan is manifested under various phases. When the word was embodied in sinful flesh, and dwelt among the Jews, the Kosmos was constituted of the Roman world; which was then based upon the institutions of paganism. After these were suppressed, the kingdom of

the adversary assumed the Constantinian form; which was subsequently changed in the west, to the papal and protestant order of things; and in the east, to the Mohammedan. These phases, however, no more affect the nature of the kingdom, than the changes of the moon alter her substance. The lord that dominates over them all from the days of Jesus to the present time, is SIN; the incarnate accuser and adversary of the law of God, and therefore styled "the Devil and Satan."

The words *ο αρχων* signify *the prince*, or one invested with power. All persons in authority are styled *αρχοντες* in the New Testament; such as magistrates, and chiefs among the people. Hence, the archon of the archons, would be the chief magistrate of the kingdom. Now, sin in its sovereign manifestations among the nations, executes its will and pleasure through the civil and ecclesiastical authorities of a state. What, then, is decreed by emperors, kings, popes, and subordinate rulers, are the mandates of "the Prince of the World;" who works in them all to gratify their own lusts, oppress the people, and "make war against the saints," with all the energy they possess. Taken collectively from the chief magistrate to the lowest, they are styled, *αρχαι* and *εξουσαι*, *principalities* and *powers*; the *κοσμοκρατορας του σκοτους του αιωνος τουτου*, *the world-rulers of the darkness of this age*; who are *τα πνευματικα της πονηριας εν τοις επουρανιαις*, *the spirits of wickedness in the high places of the kingdoms* (Eph. 6:12). So the apostle writes of the rulers of the world in his day; and from the conduct they now exhibit before the nations in all their kingdoms, it is clear that the style is as characteristic of the rulers, and of these times, as it was in the first century of the christian era. Iniquity has only changed its form, and mode of attack against the truth. The world's rulers, temporal and spiritual, are as essentially hostile to the gospel of the kingdom as ever. They could not embrace it, and retain the friendship of the world. This is as impossible now as at the beginning. But, things are now quiet with respect to the gospel; not because the world is reconciled to it; but because there are scarcely any to be found who have intelligence of it, faith, and courage enough, earnestly to contend for it as it was originally delivered to the saints (Jude 3).

In apostolic times, it was the privilege of the church to make known to the world-rulers "the manifold wisdom of God" (Eph. 3:10). This mission brought the disciples of Christ into contact with them, as is related in the Acts. When they stood before these men of sin, in whom the thinking of sinful flesh worked strongly, the truth of God proclaimed to them brought out the evil of the flesh in all its malignity. They imprisoned the disciples

of Christ; threatened them with death; tempted them with rewards; and when they could not shake their fidelity to the truth, tormented them with the cruelest tortures they could invent. The apostle styles these, *τας μεθοδειας του διαβολου*, the artifices, or *wiles of the accuser* (Eph. 6:11); against which, he exhorts believers to stand firm, being panoplied with the whole armour of God. The war being thus commenced by an attack upon the strong holds of power, the magistrates, urged on by the priests, were not content to take vengeance against them when they came in their way; but they obtained imperial decrees to hunt them out, and destroy them. This they did with destructive energy and effect. They *calumniated* the disciples, charging them with the most licentious and impious practices; and employed spies and informers, who personated brethren, to walk among them, and watch an opportunity of *accusing* them before the judge. These *adversaries* of the christians, being actuated by the same spirit of sinful flesh, the apostle terms *ο αντιδικος υμων διαβολος* *your adversary the accuser*; and to express the ferocious spirit that impelled the enemy, he compares him to a roaring lion, walking about, on the look out for prey. “Resist him,” says he; not by wrestling with flesh and blood in personal combat; but by continuing “stedfast in the faith, knowing that *the same sufferings* are inflicted in the world upon your brethren” (1Pet. 5:8-9).

To walk being dead in trespasses and sins, is to live according to *the course* (*αυων*) of this world. So says the apostle (Eph. 2:1-2). The *course of the world* is according to the thinking of sinful flesh, in whatever way it may be manifested, or expressed. If a man embrace one of the religions of Satan’s kingdom, he is still “dead in trespasses and sins,” and walks according to the course of the world. In brief, any thing short of faith in the gospel of the kingdom, and obedience to the law of faith, is walking according to the course of the world. To walk in sin is to walk in this course. Hence, the apostle terms walking according to the course of the world, walking according to *the Prince of the Power of the Air* — *ο αρχων της εξουσιας του αερος*; which he explains as “*the Spirit now working* in the children of disobedience.” The “*power of the air*,” or aerial power, is *the political power of the world*, which is animated and pervaded by *the spirit of disobedience*, which is sin in the flesh; and styled above, the Prince of the Power of the Air. This is that prince of whom Jesus spoke, saying, “Now is the condemnation (*κρισις*) of this world; now shall the Prince of this World be cast out” (Jn. 12:31), that is, “judged” (Jn. 16:11). The key to this is suggested in what follows; “And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all unto me. This he said, signifying *what death he*

*should die."*

The judgment of the Prince of the World by God, was exhibited in the contest between Jesus and the civil and spiritual power in Judea. "Its poison was like the poison of a serpent" (Psa. 58:4), when "the iniquity of his heels compassed him about." "The battle was against him" for a time. They bruised him in the heel (Gen. 3:15). "The *enemy* smote his life down to the ground; and made him to dwell in darkness, as those that had been long dead" (Psa. 143:3). But here the serpent-power of sin ended. It had stung him to death by the strength of the law, which cursed every one that was hanged upon a tree; Jesus being cursed upon this ground, God "condemned sin in the flesh," through him (Gal. 3:13; Rom. 8:3). Thus was sin, the Prince of the World, condemned, and the world with him according to the existing course of it. But, Jesus rose again, leading captivity captive; and so giving to the world an earnest, that the time would come when death should be abolished, and sin, the power of death, destroyed. Sinful flesh was laid upon him, "that through death, he might destroy *him* that had the power of death, that is, the devil," or sin in the flesh (Heb. 2:14): for, "*for this purpose* the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy

### THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL (1Jn. 3:8)

It is clear to my mind that *sin* is the thing referred to by the apostle in the word *devil*. The sting of the Serpent is its power of destruction. The "sting of death" is the power of death; and that, the apostle says, in one place, "*is sin*;" and in another, "*is the devil*." There are not two powers of death; but one only. Hence, the *devil* and *sin*, though different words, represent the same thing. "Sin *had* the power of death," and would have retained it, if the man, who was *obedient* unto death, had not gained the victory over it. But, thanks be to God, the earth is not to be a charnel house for ever; for he that overcame the world in his own person (Jn. 16:33), is destined hereafter to "take away the sin of the world," and to "make all things new" (Rev. 21:5). Every curse will then cease (Rev. 22:3), and death be swallowed up in victory; for death shall be no more (Rev. 21:4).

*The works of the devil*, or evil one, are *the works of sin*. Individually, they are "the works of the flesh" exhibited in the lives of sinners; collectively, they are on a larger scale, as displayed in the politics of the world. All the institutions of the kingdom of the adversary are the works which have resulted from the thinking of sinful flesh; though happily for the saints of God, "*the powers that be*" are controlled by Him. They

cannot do what they please. Though defiant of His truth, and His hypocritical and malignant enemies, He serves Himself of them; and dashes them against one another when the enormity of their crimes, reaching to heaven, demands His terrible rebuke.

Among the works of sin, are the numerous diseases which transgression has brought upon the world. The Hebrews, the idiom of whose language is derived from the Mosaic narrative of the origin of things, referred disease to sin under the names of the devil and Satan. Hence, they inquired, “who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?” A woman “bowed together with a spirit of infirmity for eighteen years,” is said to have been “bound of Satan,” or the adversary, for that time; and her restoration to health is termed “loosing her from the bond” (Lk. 13:10-17). Paul also writes in the same idiom to the disciples at Corinth, commanding them to deliver the incestuous brother “unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh;” that is, inflict disease upon him, that he may be brought to repentance, “that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus” (1Cor. 5:5). Thus he was “judged and chastened of the Lord, that he might not be condemned with the world” (1Cor. 11:32). This had the desired effect; for he was overwhelmed with sorrow. Wherefore, he exhorts the spiritually gifted men of the body (Jas. 5:14), to forgive and comfort, or restore him to health, “lest Satan should get an advantage over them,” by the offender being reduced to despair: “for,” says the apostle, “we are not ignorant of his devices,” or those of sin in the flesh (2Cor. 2:6-11), which is very deceitful. Others of the Corinthians were offenders in another way. They were very disorderly in the celebration of the Lord’s Supper; eating and drinking condemnation to themselves. “For this cause,” says he; that is, because they sinned thus, “many are weak and *sickly* among you, and *many sleep*,” or are dead. Many other cases might be adduced from scripture to show the connection between sin and disease; but these are sufficient. If there were no moral evil in the world, there would be no physical evils. Sin and punishment are as cause and effect in the divine economy. God does not willingly afflict, but is long suffering and kind. If men, however, will work sin, they must lay their account with “the wages of sin;” which is disease, famine, pestilence, the sword, misery, and death. But, let the righteous rejoice, that the enemy will not always triumph in the earth. The Son of God was manifested to destroy him, and all his works; which, by the power and blessing of the Father, he will assuredly do.

### THE GREAT DRAGON

*Ο οφίς ο αρχαιος, ο καλουμενος Διαβολος, και ο Σατανας, ο*

πλανων την οικουμενην ολην.

“The old Serpent, surnamed the Accuser and the Adversary,  
who deceives the whole habitable.”

The *οικουμενη ολη*, or *whole habitable*, in the days of the apostles, was that part of the earth's surface which acknowledged the dominion of Rome. Upon this platform had been erected the largest empire then known to the world. By its imperial constitution was aggregated in one dominion, all “the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life.” These lusts found free course through the constituted authorities of the pagan church and state. Of the horrors, perpetrated upon the world lying under them by their wanton riot, the reader will find an ample account in the history of pagan Rome. In the progress and maturity of this dominion, sin reigned triumphant over the human race. Its lusts were let loose; and the propensities alone directed the policy of the world.

The only antagonism experienced by sin was established in Judea. There, as we have seen, the first battle was fought, and the first victory won over sin, by the Son of Mary. These were the two combatants; *sin*, working in the children of disobedience; and “*the truth*,” in the person of Jesus. Sin bruised him in the heel; but God healed him of his wound; and so prepared him for the future contest, when he should bruise sin in the head. Now, sin could only have crucified him by the hands of power; for as this world is a concrete, and not an indigested concourse of abstractions, sin, which in the abstract “is a transgression of law,” must be incorporate to be competent to act. Sin corporealized attacked Jesus through the Roman power instigated by the chief priests of Israel. At this crisis, sin was brought to a head, and ready to sting its victim to death. The event was now about to happen, which the Lord God predicted, saying to the Serpent, “*thou shalt bruise his heel*” (Gen. 3:15). No one would be simple enough to suppose that the literal Serpent was to do this *in propria persona*. He was, however, to do it, in the sense of his being the instrumental cause of sin; which, through those that should afterwards obey it, should inflict a violent death upon the son of the woman. Hence, the Roman power, which put Jesus to death (for the Jews had not power to do it) represented the Serpent in the transaction. And, as sin had been working in the children of disobedience for 4000 years; manifesting itself in the Ninevite Assyrian, Chaldean, Persian, and Macedonian empires, whose power was at length absorbed into the Roman, the last came to be symbolized as “*the Old Serpent*.”

When the woman's seed rose from among the dead, and “led captivity captive,” the war upon the Old Serpent began in good earnest. The manner

in which it was conducted on both sides, may be learned from the Acts of Apostles. The parties were the Jewish and the Roman power on the one hand; and the Apostles and their brethren on the other. These enemies were the two seeds; the former, the “*Seed of the Serpent*,” and the latter, by constitution in Christ Jesus, the “*Seed of the Woman*” Hence, in the Apocalypse, “the Old Serpent” (Rev. 12:3, 9; 21:2), and “the Woman” (Rev. 12:1, 4, 6, 13-17), became the symbols by which they are represented. During 280 years; that is, from the day of Pentecost A.D. 33, to A.D. 313, when Constantine established himself in Rome, the contest raged between the pagan power and the woman with intense fury. She was calumniated, *accused*, and tortured, by the Old Serpent without pity. Hence, the Spirit of God, surnamed him Διαβολος, or the *Accuser*; and Σατανας, or the *Adversary*; so that, when he was “cast out” from the government of the empire, “a loud voice” is represented as “saying in the heaven, Now is come deliverance, and power, and the kingdom of our God, and the dominion of his Christ: for *the Accuser* of our brethren, *who accuseth* them before God day and night, is cast down” (Rev. 12:10). The history of this period is a striking illustration of the “*enmity*” (Gen. 3:15) God has put between the seed of the Serpent, and the seed of the woman. In the war between them, the heel of her seed was bruised by the Serpent power, as it had bruised that of their great Captain; but thanks be to God who gives them the victory, the time is at the door, when they will leave the dead, and with him bruise the Old Serpent’s head upon the mountains of Israel (Eze. 39:4). There can be no friendship between these parties. Death or victory is the only alternative. There can be no peace in the world till one or other be suppressed. The “*enmity*” is the essential hostility betwixt sin and God’s law, which is the truth. Either truth must conquer sin, or sin must abolish the truth; but compromise there can be none. I have great faith in the power of truth, because I have faith in God. He is pledged to give it the victory; and though deceivers in church and state may triumph for the time, and tyrants “destroy the earth,” their end is certain and their destruction sure.

The Dragon is the organic symbol of the Old Serpent power, as the Leopard with *four heads* and *four wings* (Dan. 7:6) was, of the quadrupartite constitution of the Macedonian. The Dragon appears in four principal scenes in the Apocalypse: *first*, in the taking him who hindered out of the way (2Thes. 2:7) A.D. 313; *second*, in the surrendering of the power, throne, and extensive dominion of the west, to papalized imperio-regal Europe, A.D. 800 (Rev. 13:2, 4), *third*, in the present crisis of the gathering of “the powers that be” to their last conflict for the world’s

dominion (Rev. 16:13); and *fourth*, in the suppression of the Serpent-power by the Lord Jesus, when he bruises his head, and restrains him for 1000 years (Rev. 20:2). As the symbol of the Old Serpent in its pagan constitution, with Rome as his satanic seat he is styled “the Great Red Dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads;” but after the revolution by which paganism was suppressed, the serpent-power of Rome is simply styled “the Dragon.” About A.D. 334, a new capital was built and dedicated, by Constantine, and called NEW ROME by an imperial edict; which, however, was afterwards superseded by the name of *Constantinople*. Old and New, Rome were now the two capitals of the Dragon-dominion; and so continued to be until Old Rome was surrendered to the imperio-papal power of the West. New Rome, or Constantinople, then became the sole capital of the Dragon empire; and old Rome the capital of the Seven-headed and Ten-horned Beast; an arrangement which has continued about 1050 years, even to this day: so that “they do homage to the Dragon, and they do homage to the Beast” (Rev 13:4), that is, they of the east are subject to Constantinople; and they of the west, to Rome.

But, the time is at hand when the dominion, divided between the Dragon and the Beast, may be re-united; and the old Roman territory, the *οικουμένη ολη*, with an immense addition of domain, again subjected to one sovereign. This may be by the fall of the Two-horned Beast (Rev. 13:11; Dan. 7:11), and the expulsion of the Turks from Constantinople; which will then become the throne of the dominion, represented by Nebuchadnezzar’s Image, which is to be broken to pieces in “the latter days” (Dan. 2:28, 34-35). The establishment of this sovereignty being accomplished, it stands upon the earth as the Accuser and Adversary of God’s people Israel; and will make war upon them (Dan. 11:41, 45; Eze. 38:8-12); and will combat with the Faithful and True One, and his saints (Rev. 19:11, 14), as did the Old Serpent-power against *Michael* (Rev. 12:7) Constantine and his confederates, in the early part of the fourth century. The result will be the same. The victory will be with Jesus, the Great Prince of Israel (Dan. 12:1), who will break his power to pieces upon the mountains of Israel in the Battle of Armageddon (Rev. 16:16; Eze. 39:4). This great Adversary of the latter days, is the Northern Autocrat for the time being. He is styled Gog by Ezekiel (Eze. 38:2). In him will be acuminated “all the power of the enemy;” that is, of SIN, imperially manifested in a dominion, such as the world has never seen before. Because of this, it is styled the Old Serpent; and because it will exist upon the old Roman territory, it is called the Dragon; and from its

hostility to God and His truth, it is “surnamed the Devil and Satan.”

### THE MAN OF SIN.

“The Man of Sin, the Son of Perdition.”

The Dragon, the Old Serpent, surnamed the Devil and Satan, being representative of SIN in its *imperial constitution*, as manifested in the past, present, and future, upon “*the Habitable*,” or Roman territory; the Man of Sin is that dynasty, “whose coming was after the energy of the Adversary with all power, and tokens, and prodigies of falsehood, and with all the deceit of iniquity in them that perish” (2Thes. 2:9-10). This is what he was in his coming, or presence. The power is styled, “the Man of Sin,” not because it is to be found in only one man, but because it is sin pre-eminently incarnate in an order of men. This order occupying one throne, was to “be revealed” out of *an apostasy* from the original apostolic faith; but before its presence could be manifested, a certain obstacle was to “be taken out of the way.” No order of men such as the apostle describes, could make its appearance upon the territory of the Roman Dragon, so long as the constitution of the empire continued pagan. This, then, was the obstacle to be removed. While it continued, the elements of the new power were at work in the christian body; but incapable of the exercise of political authority. These elements are collectively styled “the Mystery of Iniquity,” the open manifestation of which was withheld for a time. When the “*Red*,” or pagan aspect of the Dragon was changed for the “*Catholic*,” by the victories of Constantine, the *opposing power* was removed; in fact, the Adversary, or Satan, now a *professor* of christianity, took “the Mystery of Iniquity” under his patronage; and as he found paganism no longer fit for the contest against the apostolic faith, he determined to change his weapon, and to fight it with the apostasy in the name of Christ. Hence, the first thing he did was to impose this apostasy on the world as its religion. He married it to the state, and established it by law. The National Establishment, as it now became, assumed the character of “Mother Church;” and the community in Old Rome, with its bishop now converted into the chief magistrate of the city at its head, claimed to be the mistress of all churches. The apostasy being united to Satan, became the open enemy of God, and the worse than pagan persecutor of His truth. Its name is Catholic; and since the division of the Dragon territory into east and west, and the great schism about *image-worship*, it is surnamed Greek Catholic, and Roman Catholic. The undivided catholic apostasy in its first establishment, is represented in the Apocalypse, by “a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of

twelve stars" (Rev. 12:1). This woman, after *nine months of years*, or "a set time," and not long before she was clothed with the imperial robes, was "pained to be delivered" of her child, which had been conceived in her by sin. As the betrothed of the second Adam, the Serpent had beguiled her, and corrupted her mind from the simplicity that is in Christ. Part of her body had embraced another Jesus, another Spirit, and another gospel (2Cor. 11:2-4); by which they were so corrupted, that they were prepared to take the sword; declare for the first military chieftain, whose anti-pagan ambition of supreme power should induce him to embrace their cause; and to turn christianity into a State Religion. This party found a semi-pagan suited to their purpose in Constantine, surnamed "the Great." When he avowed himself their champion, all the power of the Old Serpent was brought to bear against him and his confederates. They fought; and victory perched upon the standard of the Cross, now become "the mark" of the Apostasy.

Constantine was the man-child of sin, who began that iron-rule, which, in the name of christianity, has soaked the dust of the earth with the best and noblest blood of its inhabitants. He set himself up as the arbiter of faith, and the correcter of heretics; and though, pretending to believe, yet refusing to be immersed till within three days of his death, that he might commit all the sins he would be likely to do before he was baptized for remission of sins — yet he is belauded by ecclesiastics as a great and pious christian! What Constantine began, his successors on the Dragon throne, Julian excepted, perfected. For the Bishop of Old Rome, they conceived an especial veneration and regard; seeing he was more of a hypocrite, and as much of a serpent as themselves. They energized him with all power, and set him up as the supreme pontiff of the world. This god upon earth, whom their pagan predecessors knew not, they "honored with gold, with silver, and with precious stones, and pleasant things." An humble bishop of an obscure society in Rome, they acknowledged as a god, and increased with glory (Dan. 11:38-39); so that "by the energy of Satan with all power," the dominion founded by the man-child of the apostasy, was matured; and at length possessed by the Roman bishop as the full-grown Man of Sin.

The presence of the man of sin in Rome for upwards of twelve centuries past may be determined by Paul's description of him. If we find an order of men, there, answering to the character recorded against them, we may know that the man of sin has been revealed. He describes him as one "*who opposes and exalts himself above every one called a god, or an object of veneration; so that he sits in the temple of the god as a god,*

*exhibiting himself because he is a god*" (2Thes. 2:4). This in few words is highly descriptive of the Popes. "God" in the passage signifies *a ruler* of whatever kind; for "god" in the scriptures is applied to angels, magistrates, and the whole nation of Israel; as, "I said, ye are gods; but ye shall die as one of the princes;" and, "worship him, ye gods;" the former being addressed to Israel; the latter, to the angels concerning Jesus. The "*temple of the god*" is St. Peter's at Rome. Now, the history of the papacy shows the applicability of the description to the Popes, and to them exclusively. They have systematically opposed and exalted themselves above every ruler, whether emperors or kings, and above all bishops and priests; so that they have sat in St. Peter's as gods, exhibiting themselves thus, because they claim to be gods upon earth. The incarnate devilism of these blasphemers of God's name, and of His people (Rev. 13:6-7; 18:24), and murderers of His saints, cannot be surpassed by any power that could possibly arise. They are essentially sin corporealized in human shape; and therefore most emphatically the order of the Man of Sin; as "the Holy, Apostolic, and Roman Catholic Church" is the "Mother of Harlots, and of all the abominations of the earth."

Paul styles this dynastic order *ο ανομος, the Lawless One*; and because of its destiny, "*the Son of Perdition.*" In the Apocalypse, it is represented by an Eighth Head (Rev. 17:11) of the Beast, which divides "*the habitable*" with the Dragon. Of this head, the Spirit saith, "*it goeth to perdition.*" It is a head, which exercised both civil and pontifical dominion over the west; and when resolved into other symbols, its conjoint dominion is represented by a Two-horned Beast (Rev. 13:11); and an image of the sixth head of the Seven-headed Beast (Rev. 13:14-15); the former, symbolizing the Austrian power; and the latter, his ally, the Lawless One. These are both doomed to perdition together. Their present intrigues are contributing to kindle a flame in Europe, that will convert it into "*a lake of fire burning with brimstone*" (Rev. 19:20). Into this will the Beast, and the Lawless One, his pseudo-prophet, be "*cast alive*" (Dan. 7:25; 2Thes. 2:8). The dominions they represent will be utterly destroyed by the lightning and thunderbolts of war; and their power transferred to the Dragon, the Old Serpent, surnamed the Devil and Satan, of whom I have already spoken in the last section. The binding of the Dragon will terminate the struggle which began in 1848. Sin will then be chained; and all flesh implicated in maintaining its ascendancy, be put to shame before the universe of God.

## Chapter Four — The Sentence of Death, and the Preservation of a Remnant

THE TRIAL OF THE TRANSGRESSORS. — OF THE LITERAL AND THE ALLEGORICAL — THE SENTENCE UPON THE SERPENT PARTICULARIZED. — THE “PEACE AND SAFETY” CRY — JESUS CAME NOT TO SEND PEACE, BUT A SWORD. — THE PEACE SOCIETY THE ENEMY OF GOD. — CAIN, ABEL, AND SETH. — ATHEISM DEFINED — CAIN REJECTED AS THE PROGENITOR OF THE WOMAN’S SEED, AND SETH APPOINTED. — THE ANTEDILUVIAN APOSTASY — THE CAINITES AND SETHITES DISTINCT SOCIETIES. — THEIR UNION THE RUIN OF THE OLD WORLD, OF WHICH EIGHT SONS OF SETH ONLY SURVIVE. — THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD — THE SENTENCE UPON WOMAN. — HER SOCIAL POSITION DEFINED. — THE SENTENCE UPON ADAM — THE CONSTITUTION OF SIN — OF SIN AS A PHYSICAL QUALITY OF THE FLESH. — OF THE HEREDITARY NATURE OF SIN. — OF “ORIGINAL SIN” — MEN, SINNERS IN A TWO-FOLD SENSE. — THE CONSTITUTION OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. — MEN BECOME SAINTS BY ADOPTION. — THE THREE WITNESSES. — THE “NEW BIRTH” EXPLAINED. — THE TWO PRINCIPLES. — OF “THE LIGHT WITHIN” — THE SCRIPTURE REVELATION THE DIVINE PRINCIPLE OF ILLUMINATION. — THE AWFUL CONDITION OF “THE CHURCH.” — OF THE HIDDEN MAN OF THE HEART.

**I**N the previous chapter, I have treated of the introduction of sin into the world; its immediate effects upon the transgressors; and, of some of its remoter consequences upon their posterity. We left Adam and his companion hid among the trees of the garden, greatly alarmed at the voice of God; and overwhelmed with shame at the condition to which they had reduced themselves. But, though hid, as they supposed, they soon found the truth of the saying that is written, that “there is not any creature that is not manifest in His sight: but all things are naked and open unto the eyes of Him with whom we have to do” (Heb. 4:13). When the Lord God called to Adam, He said, in answer to the question, “Where art thou?” “I was *afraid*, because I was *naked*; and I *hid* myself.” This was the truth as far as it went; but it was not the whole truth. Fear, shame, and concealment, are plainly avowed; but why he was ashamed, he was not ingenuous enough to confess. The Lord God, however, knowing from the mental constitution He had bestowed upon him, that man could not be ashamed unless his conscience was defiled by transgression of His law in fact or supposition; directed His next inquiry, so as at once to elicit a confession of the whole truth. “Who told thee,” said He, “that thou wast naked?” Did I tell thee, or did any of the Elohim? Or, “hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?” Thou hast no cause to be afraid of Me, or ashamed of thine appearance as I have formed thee; unless thou hast sinned against Me by transgressing My law. Thou hast heard My voice, and stood upright and naked in My presence before, and wert not ashamed; what hast thou done? Why coverest thou thy transgression by hiding thine iniquity in thy bosom? (Job 31:33). But Adam still unwilling to be blamed according to his demerits, in confessing

reflected upon the Lord God, and turned evidence against Eve. “The woman,” said he, “whom *Thou* gavest to be with me, *she* gave me of the tree, and I did eat.” As much as to say, if Thou hadst not put her in my way, and I had been left to myself, I should not have done it. It is she who is chiefly to blame; for she not only eat herself, but tempted me.

The offence being traced to Eve, the Lord Elohim said to her, “what is this that *thou* hast done?” But her ingenuousness was no more conspicuous than Adam’s. She confessed that she had eaten, but excused herself on the ground of a deception having been practised upon her by the serpent: “the serpent beguiled me,” said she, “and I did eat.”

There is no evidence that the Serpent either touched the tree, or eat of its fruit. Indeed, if it had it would have committed no offence; for the law was not given to him, but to Adam and Eve only; and “where there is no law there is no transgression.” Besides, Paul says, Eve was the first in the transgression. The Lord God, therefore, did not interrogate the Serpent as He had the others. He had, by his clumsy interpretation of what he had seen and heard, corrupted Eve’s mind from the simplicity of faith, and obedience to the divine law; but he was incapable of showing upon what moral grounds he had called in question its *literality*. He *thought* they would not surely die; because he *thought* they could as well eat of the tree of life as of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. He thought nothing of the immorality of the Lord God’s solemnly declaring a thing, and not performing it. Cognizance of the morality of thoughts and actions was beyond the sphere of its mentality. With all its superior shrewdness, it was neither responsible, nor able to give an account.

All the evidence in the case being elicited, the Lord God proceeded to pass sentence upon the accused in the order of their conviction. Being incriminated by Eve, and having, in effect, accused God of lying, the Lord began with him, and said, “Because thou hast *done* this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: and *I* will put *enmity* between *thee* and the woman, and between *thy seed* and *her seed*: He shall bruize *thy head*, and thou shalt bruize *his heel*.”

This sentence was both *literal* and *allegorical*, like the rest of the things exhibited in the Mosaic account; being “representations of the knowledge and the truth” (Rom. 2:20; Heb. 8:5; 9:9, 23-24; 10:1; Rom. 5:14; Gal. 4:24). For the information of the unlearned reader I remark, that to allegorize is to speak in such a way that something else is intended than is contained in the words literally construed. The historical allegory has a *double sense*, namely, the *literal* and the *figurative*; and the latter is as

*real*, as the former is essential to its existence. Thus, the *literal* serpent was *allegorical* of “sin in the flesh;” which is therefore figuratively styled the serpent, &c., as before explained. The literal formation of Eve out of Adam’s side was allegorical of the formation of the church out of him, of whom Adam was the figure; therefore the church is the figurative Eve, and its temptation illustrated by that of the literal one. The examples of this are almost infinite. That of Abraham, Sarah, and Hagar as allegorized by Paul in the text below, is a beautiful illustration of the relation between the literal and the figurative, as they are employed in the scriptures of truth. The discernment of the due limit between them is acquired, not by rules, but by much and diligent study of the word.

The literal is the exact construction of the sentence as it reads, and is found in strict accordance with their natural habit, and mutual antipathy between serpents and mankind. They go upon the belly, and lick the dust; and by the deadly quality of their venom, or sting, they are esteemed more hateful than any other creatures. In walking with a naked foot one would be bitten in the heel, whose retaliation would be instinctively to bruise the reptile’s head. This is all perfectly natural; but what does it suggest?

Much that might be said upon the allegorical meaning of this passage is already before the reader. I shall add, therefore, by way of summary the following particulars: —

1. The Serpent as the author of sin, is allegorical of “sin in the flesh;” which is therefore called *ο πονηρος*, “the Wicked One;” and symbolized in its personal and political agency by “the Serpent.”

2. The putting of “enmity” between the Serpent and the woman, is allegorical of the establishment of enmity between sin, incorporate in the institutions of the world, or the serpent: and the obedience of faith, embodied in the congregation of the Lord, which is the woman.

3. The “*seed of the Serpent*” is allegorical of those over whom sin reigns, as evinced in their obeying it in the lusts thereof. They are styled “*the servants of sin*” (Rom. 6:12, 17, 19); or, “the tares” (Matt. 13:25, 38).

4. The “*seed of the woman*” is allegorical of “*the children of the kingdom*” (Matt. 13:25, 38),” or, “servants of righteousness” (Rom. 6:12, 17, 19). They are also termed “the good seed” (Matt. 13:23, 38), who hear and understand the word of the kingdom, sown in their hearts as “incorruptible seed” (1Pet. 1:23).

5. The seed of the Serpent, and the seed of the woman, are phrases to be taken in the singular and plural numbers. Plurally, in the sense of the fourth particular; and singularly, of *two separate hostile personages*.

6. The serpent-bruise of the heel is the sixth head of the dragon, to be

crushed at the period of its binding, in the person of the last of the Autocrats.

7. The head-bruise of the dragon, the old Serpent, surnamed the Devil and Satan, is emphatically the seed of the woman, but not of the man.

The allegorical reading of the text founded upon these particulars is as follows: “I will put the enmity (Rom. 8:7) of that mode of thinking thou hast elicited in Eve and her husband against My law, between the powers that shall be hereafter, in consequence of what thou hast done; and the faithful, and unblemished corporation, I shall constitute: and I will put this enmity of the spirit against the flesh, and of the flesh against the spirit (Gal. 5:16-17; 4:29), between all who obey the lusts of the flesh, which thou hast excited; and those of My institution who shall serve Me: their chief shall bear away the world’s sin (Jn. 1:29) which thou hast originated; and shall destroy all the works (1Jn. 3:8) that have grown out of it: and the sin-power (Jn. 19:10) shall wound him to death; but he shall recover it, and accomplish the work I now pre-ordain him to do.”

### **THE PEACE AND SAFETY CRY.**

“There is no peace to the wicked saith God.”

The allegorical signification of the sentence, became the plan of “the foundation of the world,” under the altered circumstances which sin had introduced. It constitutes the earth the arena of a terrible strife between two hostile powers; which was not to terminate until His law gained the ascendancy over the sin of the world; and but one sovereign will be obeyed by the sons of men. The enmity He put between these parties was not a mere unfriendly verbal disputation, but one which reeked of blood. It began with the dispute which caused Abel to lose his life, and has continued unto this day. For nearly 6000 years has this enmity made the earth a field of blood, and yet the war is not ended. The sin-power still lords it over the world, and is marshalling its forces for a last decisive blow. The “powers that be” have laid low the saints of God in all the countries of their dominion; they have bruised them in the heel; and are now taking up their positions, and preparing themselves to arbitrate their relative and future destiny by the sword. They have forgotten, or are indifferent to, the enormities of the past. They know not that the righteous blood they have shed upon the earth cries loudly for vengeance in the ears of God. Truth, justice, and equity, their souls hate; and all that they propose is to destroy the liberty and happiness of mankind; and to make eternal their own vicious and hateful rule. But God is as just as He is full

of goodness, mercy, and truth. "The death of His saints is precious in the sight of the Lord;" and He will not permit them to go unavenged. The "powers that be" can therefore no more perpetually exist, than convicted robbers and murderers can escape the punishment due to their crimes. The law of retribution to which God has assigned the adjudication of their punishment, says, "Give them blood to drink, for they are deserving; *because they have shed the blood of saints and prophets*" (Rev. 16:6): "Reward them even as they have rewarded you, and double unto them double according to their works; in the cup which they have filled fill to them double" (Rev. 18:6).

But, though the scriptures of truth are so explicit with respect to the blasphemous and felonious character of the governments of the world; though they denounce the judgments of war, pestilence, and famine upon the nations subject to them; though they declare that the wicked are the Lord's sword to execute His judgments upon one another; though they most emphatically and solemnly aver, that God says "there shall be no peace to the wicked" (Isa. 57:21); and though men see, and *profess* to deplore, the whoredoms and witchcrafts of the Roman Jezebel, and the enormities of the cruel tyrants who pour out her victims' blood like water to uphold her: notwithstanding all this, there are multitudes of people who pretend to take the Bible as the rule of their faith; who claim to be "pious," and class themselves among the saints of the Lord: I say, men of these pretensions, headed by political and spiritual guides, are clamoring for the abolition of war, and the settlement of all international differences by arbitration! Such persons may be very benevolent, or very covetous; but they are certainly not very wise. Their outcry about "peace" evinces their ignorance of the nature of "sinful flesh," and of the testimony of God; or, if cognizant of them, their infidelity, and shallowness of mind. Before peace can be established in the world, "the enmity" which God has put between good and evil, in word and deed, must be abolished. Peace is to be deprecated as a calamity by the faithful, so long as the Roman Jezebel and her paramours are found among the living. "What peace, so long as her whoredoms and witchcrafts are so many?" (2Kings 9:22). Will they destroy the divisions among powers and people, which God's truth is ever calculated to make where it is received in whole or part? Arbitration indeed! And who are to be the arbitrators? The popes, cardinals, priests, emperors, and kings of the nations? Can justice, integrity, and good faith, proceed from such reprobates? Do the quakers, and financial, or acquisitive, reformers imagine, that a righteous arbitration could emanate from them upon any question in which the interest of nations as opposed

to theirs were concerned? Really, the conceit of pious infidelity is egregiously presumptuous. If this peace-mania be a specimen of "*the light within*," alas! how great is the darkness of that place which professes to be enlightened by it.

But the most absurd thing imaginable is that the arbitrationists profess to advocate peace upon scriptural grounds! Because one of the titles of the Lord is "the Prince of Peace," they argue that war is displeasing to God; and that Jesus came to establish peace as the result of preaching. But war is not displeasing to God any more than a rod is displeasing to him that uses it for correction. God instituted war when He put enmity between the serpent and the woman. It is a divine institution for the punishment of the transgressors of His law; and a most beneficent one too: for all the little liberty the world enjoys is attributable to the controversy of the tongue, the pen, and the sword. What would have been the fate of the thirteen transatlantic Colonies, if they had been left to the arbitrativè justice of George the third's contemporaries? The heel of spiritual tyranny, backed by the civil power, would have trampled upon them to this moment, as it does upon the rights of the quakers here at this day. The weak who contend for liberty and truth, have every thing to dread from arbitration. With sword in hand, they may extort justice from the strong; but, if under the necessity of expecting it at the conscience and tender mercies of "the powers that be," the award will be a mockery of justice, and an insult to the sufferings of the oppressed.

Yea, verily, the Lord Jesus is "*the Prince of Peace*;" and therefore, no peace society can give peace to the world. It is he alone, who can establish "peace on earth and good will among men;" for he only is morally fit, and potentially competent to do it. The peace of the arbitrationists is peace based upon the transgression of the divine law; and the hostility of the covenanters to the gospel of the kingdom. It is an impure peace; peace with the serpent power reigning over the blood stained earth. Such a peace as this avaunt! Eternal war is better for the world than such a compromise with sin. The peace Messiah brings is "*first pure*." It is a peace the result of conquest; the tranquility which succeeds the bruising of the Serpent's head. It is consequent upon the establishment of God's sovereignty over the nations, by the hand of him whom He hath prepared to "break in pieces the oppressor" (Psa. 72:4; Rev. 11:18), and let the oppressed go free. "*In his days shall the righteous flourish; and abundance of peace so long as the moon endures. His enemies shall lick the dust; all nations shall serve him, and call him blessed*" (Psa. 72:7, 11, 17). Then shall he judge among them, and rebuke them, and speak peace to them (Zech. 9:10); "and they

shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more" (Isa. 2:4).

But the Father did not send Jesus with the idea of bringing about this mighty revolution among the nations by preaching the gospel; neither did He propose to effect it in the absence of His Son. When he appeared in humiliation he came to take away peace from the earth, as both his words and history prove. "Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, nay; but rather division. I am come to send fire upon the earth; and what I wish (is) that it were already kindled" (Lk. 12:49, 51). "I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his nearest and dearest relations. So that a man's foes shall be they of his own household" (Matt. 10:34-36). This is the way the Prince of Peace spoke when on earth. The doctrine he taught is distasteful to the natural mind; and, by the purity of its principles, and astonishing nature of its promises, excites the enmity and incredulity of the flesh. Loving sin and hating righteousness, the carnal mind becomes the enemy and persecutor of those who advocate it. The enmity on the part of the faithless is inveterate; and where they have the power, they stir up war even at the domestic hearth. If the believer will agree to be silent, or to renounce his faith, there will then be "peace and love" such as the world, that "loves its own," is able to afford. But the true believers are not permitted to make any compromise of the kind. They are commanded to "contend earnestly for the faith once for all delivered to the saints" (Jude 3); and so long as they do this, they may lay their account with tribulation of various kinds. There is a vast deal of this false peace and spurious charity in the protestant world. Men have become traitors to Christ, and betray him with their lips. They say, "O how we love the Lord!" and were he here they would doubtless kiss him; but, like Judas they have collocated with his enemies, and are as popular with the world as its god can possibly desire.

The truth is, judging from their arguments, the peace-mongers are not so man-loving as they pretend. The cry for peace is a piece of ventriloquism emanating from the pocket. Their strongest argument against war is based upon its cost. The taxes are burdensome because of the extravagance and warlike habits of past governments. This pinches them in the iron chest; and diminishes the profits of trade; and curtails the means of indulging the lusts of their flesh, of their eyes, and the pride of life. It is well these mammon-worshippers should feel the pinch. They are the enemies of God, and oblivious of His slaughtered saints; and, therefore, richly deserving of all the punishment the recklessness of "the

powers” have entailed upon the world. Those who escape the sword and the famine groan under the expense of *punishing the wicked at their own cost*. Thus, the punishment re-acts upon all classes. I say, these peace-criers are the enemies of God; for with all their profession of piety, they are at peace with the world, and in high esteem and friendship with it; and “*whosoever*,” says the scripture, “*is a friend of the world is the enemy of God*.” Look at the peace congress at Paris, composed of popish priests, dissenting ministers, French politicians, self-illuminati of the quaker school, English radicals, American pietists of all colors, rationalists, infidels, &c. &c.; all in such high favor with *the liberticide dynasty* of France, as to be let into “*Egypt and Sodom*” (Rev. 11:8) without passports, or custom-house scrutiny; and to be *fêted* by one of the state officials. In what way can the world show its friendship to the peace society more palpably; or the society its reciprocity of feeling with the most godless and christless portion of it? The peace society is the world’s beloved friend. The world wants peace, that it may find a respite from the judgments of God for its iniquity; and that it may enrich itself by commerce, and enjoy itself in all the good things of life. The society is the world’s *employee*; its zealous, utopian, missionary; and therefore, individually and collectively “*the enemy of God*.”

Still, even out of so impious a speculation as this peace society, “the wise who understand” (Dan. 12:10) may extract encouragement. They will discern a providence in the foundation of the quaker sect. This unscriptural cry of “peace and safety,” emanated from them. They have gained wealth in the temple of their god; and this with their friend “the world,” is a sufficient guarantee of their worth and respectability. Whatever they were in the beginning, matters not; they are now the most popular of all religionists with the masses; to please whom a man must pander to their propensities. All sorts of anti-government factions colleague with the quakers in their cry of peace; not because they love peace for its own sake; but by curtailing the resources of the state, and so necessitating the reduction of armies, they think they can the more easily supersede the existing tyrannies by a still worse one of their own, as it would doubtless prove. This unhallowed coalition proclaims its outcry to be “*the world’s cry*.” We accept it as such. It is the cry of the world, which echoes in tones of thunder in the ears of the true believers. It is a cry in the providence of God, which is a great “sign of the times;” announcing that “the Lord standeth at the door and knocks” (Rev. 3:20), and is about quickly and unexpectedly to appear (Rev. 16; 22:7, 20). It is the world’s cry, as the cry of a woman in travail, which has been extorted by sudden and tormenting

pains. It blows a trumpet in the wise and understanding ear, sounding the approach of “the day of the Lord as a thief in the night;” for “so it cometh; and *when they shall say*, PEACE and SAFETY; *then sudden destruction cometh upon them*, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape” (1Thes. 5:1-3). Such is the divine mission of the quakers, and their allies the Cobdenite reformers. Not satisfied with crying peace, they cry “SAFETY” likewise. This is a peculiar feature of Cobdenism, which urges the disbandment of regiments, and the dismantling of ships, on the perverse presumption that danger there is none! Blind leaders of the blind. The groans of nations ascending to Heaven on every side; the kindling embers of war smoking in Rome, Vienna, and Constantinople — and yet ye cry “peace and safety;” surely ye are incorrigibly demented, and ripe for capture and destruction.

### CAIN, ABEL, AND SETH.

“If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted?”

The allegorical signification of the sentence upon the Serpent kindled the first scintillation of hope in the human heart of the appearance of one, who should deliver the world from all its ills, and advance it to a higher state. The promise of such a personage, and of such a consummation, was the nucleus of that “faith, which is the assured expectation of things hoped for, and the conviction of things unseen” (Heb. 11:1). The belief, and spiritualizing influence, of this hope, became the ground of acceptance with God in the earliest times. Faith in this promise was established as the principle of classification among the sons of Adam. Belief in what He promises is belief in God; and its influence upon “the fleshly tablet of the heart” is most deifying in its effect; making the subject of it “*a partaker of the divine nature.*” Atheism in its scriptural import is not the denial of God’s existence. None but a fool would say, “there is no God” (Psa. 14:1). It is worse than this. It is to believe that He exists, and yet to treat Him as a liar. To do this, is not to believe His promises; and he that is faithless of these, is “*without God,*” *αθεος*, i.e. an atheist in the world (Eph. 2:12).

In the beginning, this kind of atheism soon manifested itself in the family of Adam. Cain, who was conceived in sin, true to his paternity, was as faithless of God’s word as the Serpent; while Abel believed on God. Hence, the apostle says, “*By faith* Abel offered unto God *more sacrifice* (*πλεονα θυσιαν*) than Cain, *by which* he obtained witness that *he was righteous*, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh” (Heb. 11:4). This is an important intimation, importing that no religious

services are acceptable to God, which are not predicated on *the belief of His promises*; “for without faith it is impossible to please God” (Heb. 11:6). This was, therefore, the ground of Cain’s reprobation. “The Lord had respect unto Abel and to his offering: but unto Cain and his offering He had not respect.” This made Cain fierce and sullen. He refused to “bring of the firstlings of the flock, and of the fat thereof.” He did not believe in its necessity, having no faith in the remission of sins by the shedding of sacrificial blood (Heb. 9:22; 10:4-14); nor in the fulfilment of God’s promise concerning him, who, being “bruised in the heel,” or slain as Abel’s accepted lamb, should arise, and “bruise the Serpent’s head,” *in destroying the works of sin* (1Jn. 3:8). This is what Cain did not believe; and his faithlessness expressed itself in neglecting to walk in “the way of the Lord.” Nevertheless, he continued “a professor of religion;” for “he brought of the fruit of the ground an offering to the Lord.” But the Lord paid no respect to him or his offering; because, in neglecting the sacrifice, he had set up his judgment against God; and in being faithless had in effect treated God as a liar; for, saith the scripture, “he that believeth not God hath made Him a liar” (1Jn. 5:10).

But Cain’s sullen anger against God could only wound himself. His refusal to obey Him could not injure the Most High. He insulted God with his “will-worship and voluntary humility” (Col. 2:18, 23), and convicted himself as an *evil-doer*. Self-condemned and impotent, he vented his rage against his brother, whom God respected and had accepted. He was wroth against him; “because his own works were evil, and his brother’s righteous” (1Jn. 3:12, 15). He was now a murderer in principle; and with this fratricidal feeling rankling in his heart, brought his gift to the altar (Matt. 5:22-24). But God, who “discerns the thoughts and intents of the heart” (Heb. 4:12), called him to account for his lowering aspect, and anger against his brother, and said, “If thou *doest well*, shalt thou not be accepted? And if thou doest not well, a sin-offering lieth at the door. And his hope shall be towards thee, and thou shalt rule over him,” or have the excellency as the first-born and progenitor of the Seed. But Cain was a genuine “seed of the Serpent.” The thinking of *the flesh*, called by Adam the Serpent, was strong within him. “He talked with Abel,” who, doubtless, pleaded for the things repudiated by Cain. But Cain’s reasonings were perverse; well-doing was not at all to his taste; so that, having no faith in the *promise*, he preferred to follow his own waywardness; and being determined to rid himself of his brother’s expostulations, he mingled his blood with the dust of the ground.

Thus was slain by a brother’s hand the protomartyr of the faith. A

righteous man, respected and beloved of God. His only offence was, that, in believing the promises of God and doing well, his brother was reproved. The fleshly mind hates righteousness, and those who practice it; so that between the two parties *the truth and righteousness of God* (Matt. 6:33; Rom. 1:16-17; 3:21-22, 25-26) lie as an apple of discord. Abel was the first of Eve's sons of whom honorable mention is made on account of "the obedience of faith" (Rom. 16:25-26; 1:5). As Cain was of the evil one by transgression; so Abel was of God by the obedience of faith, which evinced that "God's seed remained in him." Hence, though both of them were born of Eve according to the flesh, their spiritual paternity was as opposite as light and darkness. Cain was a man of Sin; and Abel, an accepted son of God. In these characters, they stood at the head of two divisions of their father's family; and proximately represented the seed of the Serpent, and the seed of the Woman. Cain bruised his brother's heel; but God appointed a substitute for Abel in the person of Seth; by whom Cain's headship was bruised, and his posterity superseded in the earth. Eve, says Moses, "bare a son, and called his name Seth: for, said she, God hath *appointed* ME another seed *instead of* Abel, whom Cain slew." She had many other sons, but none of them are mentioned except Cain, Abel, and Seth. When, therefore, we are informed, that Seth was "appointed *instead of* Abel," and trace the posterity of Seth terminating through a certain line in Jesus of Nazareth, the Son of God; we are taught, that Cain lost his excellency by sin, and was therefore set aside; and Abel provisionally appointed to be the progenitor of the seed, who is to bruise the Serpent's headship over the world. But, Abel having been bruised in the heel, it became necessary, in order to carry out the divine purpose, and to answer allegorically the indications of the sentence upon the Serpent, to appoint another son of Eve in the place of Abel. According to this arrangement, Abel became the type of Jesus, wounded in the heel; but whose sprinkled blood speaks better things than Abel's (Heb. 12:24), which cried only for vengeance: while Seth typifies him in his re-appearance among the sons of men to bruise sin under foot; and to exterminate in the course of his reign, the Serpent's seed from the face of the earth.

Notwithstanding his crime Cain was permitted to live. But the seed of evil-doers never gets renown. Sooner or later their deeds of villany consign their names to reprobation. God hid His face from Cain, and exiled him from the settlements in Eden. He wandered still further to the East, "and dwelt in the land of Nod." There he founded a city, and called it Enoch. His offspring multiplied, and found out many inventions. They

became wandering tribes, dwelling in tents and tending cattle; others of them, musicians; and artificers in brass and iron. Their women were beautiful, and, as the descendants of Cain, untrained in the nurture and admonition of the Lord, were vain in their imaginations, and demoralizing in their associations.

Seth's descendants in the direct line ended in Noah and Japheth at the time of the flood. His posterity, in this and the collateral branches, multiplied considerably; but for a time constituted a separate community from the progeny of Cain. During the lifetime of Enos, son of Seth, "they began to call themselves by the name of the Lord," or "*sons of God*" (Gen. 4:26; 6:2): while the faithless, and corrupt worshippers, of the land of Nod, were simply styled "*men*."

### THE ANTEDILUVIAN APOSTASY.

The Sethites and the Cainites stood related to one another as the church of God and the world; or, as the woman and the serpent. So long as the sons of God maintained their integrity, and walked in "*the way of the Tree of Life*," the two communities had no religious association, or family intercourse. The time, however, arrived when the middle wall of partition was about to be laid low by a general apostasy. A spirit of liberalism had arisen among the sons and daughters of Seth, the result of an expiring faith, which predisposed them to a fraternity, or mixed communion, with the Cainites; who, like their father, were religionists of a wilful stamp. The Serpent's seed enjoyed themselves in those days as they do now. They were men of the flesh, grovelling in their tastes, habits, and pursuits; and devoted to the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life. Their religion sanctified what pleased them best; and doubtless afforded a fair specimen of the same sort of thing in all subsequent ages. It is probable, that the precepts and example of the sons of God had considerably modified the original impiety of the Cainites, so as to bring things to a similar state as that observable in our day. Sects, between whom there were no more dealings in their beginning than between the Jews and the Samaritans, are now so liberal, that they agree to be silent upon all controversial topics for which they once contended to the death, and to recognize one another as brethren in the Lord! Thus, if they ever had the truth, they have suppressed it by a tacit compromise; and have become highly respectable, and singularly amiable and polite; so that they "have need of nothing," but to enjoy the good things of the world within their reach.

The serpents had become so harmless, and even pious, under the influence abroad, and were withal so fair to look upon, and so enchanting in their ways; that the Sethites took them into their bosoms, and cherished them with the affection of their own flesh. "They saw," says Moses, "that the daughters of men were fair; and they took wives of all they chose." This was a fatal step. Can a man take fire into his bosom, and not be burned? The sons of God corrupted themselves in marrying the daughters of Cain. Instead of bringing them over to "*the Way of the Tree of Life*," they were beguiled into "*the Way of Cain*" (Jude 11). For sons of God to marry daughters of Belial is to jeopardize their fidelity to God. This practice has ever been fruitful of apostasy. Balaam was well aware of this; and knowing that the only way to bring a curse upon Israel was to involve them in transgression; he therefore taught Balak, the King of Moab, to tempt them with the fair daughters of his people, as the readiest way of beguiling them into the worship of their idols; which would cause God to hate them, and so facilitate their conquest by the Moabites. The policy succeeded but too well for the honor and happiness of Israel. Moses says, "they began to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab." The consequence of this licentiousness was that the women invited Israel unto the sacrifices of their gods: and they did eat, and bowed down to them. And Israel joined himself unto Baal Peor (Num. 25:1-2). And the anger of the Lord was kindled against them; so that He slew four and twenty-thousand of them.

After the same example, the union of the Sethites and Cainites was productive of the worst results. The offspring of this union were "mighty men of renown," whose wickedness "was great in the earth;" for "every imagination of the thoughts of their hearts was only evil continually" (Gen. 6:1-5). Their apostasy, however, was not perfected without remonstrance on the part of God. There was one eminent man of whom it is testified, that "he pleased God." He "walked with God" in the way of the Tree of Life, for three hundred years after the birth of Methuselah. His name is Enoch. The spirit of prophecy was in him; and the gigantic wickedness of the Antediluvians aroused him to reprove their iniquity. Animated by the hope of the promise concerning the woman's seed, he prophesied of the serpents of his own and future time, saying, "Behold, the Lord cometh with myriads of his saints, to dispense justice towards all, and to convict all that are ungodly among them of their ungodly deeds which they have impiously committed; and of all their hard speeches, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him" (Jude 14-15). But, his expostulation was unheeded; and God graciously "translated him that he

should not see death" (Heb. 11:5); thus rewarding him for his constancy, and giving the faithful a notable illustration, and earnest, of "the recompense of the reward" (Heb. 11:26); and of the certainty of the punishment of the world.

Things went on from bad to worse; "for *all* flesh had corrupted '*His Way*' upon the earth;" "and the earth was filled with violence." Before, however, things had come to the worst, the Lord made another effort to reclaim the Antediluvians. He had resolved to put an end to the wickedness of man upon the earth; for, said He, "*My Spirit shall not always* strive with him, because he is but flesh" (Psa. 78:39). This intimates a limit to His forbearance; that it should have an end, but not immediately; for it is added, "yet his days shall be a hundred and twenty years."

Four hundred and eighty years before the announcement of this determination a son was born to Lamech, the grandson of Enoch, whom he named Noah; that is, comfort, saying, "this same shall comfort us concerning our work and toil of our hands, because of the ground which the Lord hath cursed." This was the hope of those who remained faithful of the sons of Seth. They labored in hope of a translation into a rest from their labors, when the curse should be removed from the earth (Rev. 22:3). In process of time, Noah was "warned of God of things not seen as yet." Noah believed them; and "God, *by His spirit*" in him, "went and preached to the spirits (now) in prison" (1Pet. 3:19), that is, to the Antediluvians, "who were disobedient in the days of Noah." He warned them of the coming flood, which would "destroy them from the earth;" and proved to them his own conviction of its certainty by "preparing an ark for the safety of his own house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith" (Heb. 11:7). But, his faith thus made perfect by his works, made no salutary impression upon his contemporaries. "They were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and knew not till the flood came, and took them all away" (Matt. 24:38-39); leaving only eight persons of the sons of Seth alive.

Thus, was the mingled seed of Seth and Cain exterminated from the earth. Cain's race became utterly extinct, and those only of Seth remained, who were upright in their generations, and who walked with God. The distinction of seeds was temporarily suspended. The generation of vipers was extinct; but sin in the flesh survived — a principle, destined in after times to produce the most hideous and terrible results.

## **THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD.**

**“Inherit the Kingdom which shall have been prepared from the Foundation of the World.”**

As the woman had so wilfully sought the gratification of her flesh, when the Lord God passed sentence upon her He made it the ground of her punishment. “I will,” said He, “greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children: and thy desire shall be subject to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.” This being her portion as the consequence of sin, the reverse would have been her condition, so long as her animal nature should have continued unchanged, if she had remained obedient. She would have brought forth children without pain, and would have had fewer of them; nor would she have been deprived of that equality she enjoyed in the garden, and consequently she would have escaped that degradation she has experienced in all the countries of the world. The punishment, however, was not inflicted simply as an individual sorrow. The pain was personal, and the subjection likewise; but the multiplication of woman’s conception became necessary from the altered circumstances of things; which were then being constituted for the ensuing seven thousand years. In the war divinely instituted between the seeds of the Serpent and the Woman, there would be a great loss of life. The population of the world would be greatly thinned; besides which great havoc would be made by pestilence, famine, and the ordinary diseases of the flesh. To compensate this waste, and still to maintain an increase, so that the earth might be filled, necessitated that part of woman’s punishment involved in the multiplication of the conception, which is a great domestic calamity under the Serpent-dominion of sin.

We hear much in some parts of the world of the political rights and equality of women with men; and of their preaching and teaching in public assemblies. We need wonder at nothing which emanates from the unenlightened thinking of sinful flesh. There is no absurdity too monstrous to be sanctified by unspiritualized animal intellect. Men do not think according to God’s thinking, and therefore it is they run into the most unscriptural conceits; among which may be enumerated the political and social equality of women. Trained to usefulness, of cultivated intellect, and with moral sentiments purified and ennobled by the nurture and admonition of the Lord’s truth, women are “helps meet” for the Elohim; and much too good for men of ordinary stamp. The sex is susceptible of this exaltation; though I despair of witnessing it in many instances till “the

Age to come.” But, even women of this excellency of mind and disposition, were it possible for such to do so, would be guilty of indiscretion, presumption, and rebellion against God’s law, in assuming equality of rank, equality of rights, and authority over man, which is implied in teaching and preaching. It is the old ambition of the sex to be equal to the gods; but in taking steps to attain it, they involved themselves in subjection to men. Preaching, and lecturing, women, are but species of actresses, who exhibit upon the boards for the amusement of sinful and foolish men. They aim at an equality for which they are not physically constituted; they degrade themselves by the exhibition, and in proportion as they rise in assurance, they sink in all that really adorns a woman.

The law, which forms a part of the foundation of the world, says to the woman, “*He shall reign over thee.*” The nature of this subjection is well exhibited in the Mosaic law (Num. 30:3-15). A daughter being yet in her youth in her father’s house, could only make a vow subject to his will. If he held his peace, and said nothing for or against, she was bound by her word; but if when he heard it, he disallowed it, she was not bound to perform; and the Lord forgave the failure of the vow. The same law applied to a wife. A widow, or divorced woman, were both bound to fulfil, unless their husbands had made them void before separation. If not, being subject to God, they had no release. This throws light upon the apostle’s instructions concerning women. “They are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law.” And “let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to *usurp* authority over the man, but to be in silence.” The reason he gives for imposing silence and subjection, is remarkable. He adduces the priority of Adam’s formation; and the unhappy consequences of Eve’s talkativeness and leadership in transgression; as it is written, “Adam was first formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression” (1Tim. 2:11-14) first. And then, as to their public ministrations, he says, “Let women keep silence in the congregations; for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but to be under obedience, as saith the law. And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the congregation” (1 Cor. 14:34-35). It is true, that in another place the apostle says, “let the aged women be teachers of good things;” but then this teaching is not to be in the congregation, or in the brazen attitude of a public oratrix. They are to exercise their gift of teaching privately among their own sex, “that they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to

their own husbands, that the word of God (which they profess) be not blasphemed" (Tit. 2:4-5). Christian women should not copy after the god-aspiring Eve, but after Sarah, the faithful mother of Israel, who submitted herself in all things to Abraham, "calling him lord" (Gen. 18:12). Nor should their obedience be restricted to christian husbands only. They should also obey them "*without the word*;" that is, those who have not submitted to it, in order that they may be won over to the faith when they behold the chaste and respectful behavior of their wives, produced by a belief of the truth (1Pet. 3:1-6).

Such are the statutory provisions enacted in the world's constitution at the beginning, with respect to the position of women in the body social, and political. Any attempt to alter the arrangement, is rebellion against God, and usurpation of the rights of men to whom God has subjected them. Their wisdom is to be quiet; and to make their influence felt by their excellent qualities. They will then rule in the hearts of their rulers, and so ameliorate their own subjection as to convert it into a desirable and sovereign obedience.

A man should never permit the words of a woman to intervene between him and the laws of God. This is a rock upon which myriads have made shipwreck of the faith. Adam sinned in consequence of listening to Eve's silvery discourse. No temptation has proved more irresistible to the flesh than the enticing words of woman's lips. "They drop as a honeycomb, and her mouth is smoother than oil: but her end is bitter as wormwood, and sharp as a two-edged sword. Her feet go down to death; and her steps take hold on hell" (Prov. 5:3-5). Adam was a striking illustration of this truth, as appears from the sentence pronounced upon him. "Because," said the Lord God, "thou hast hearkened to the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the Tree of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake: in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field: in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return." Thus, having passed sentence upon the serpent, the woman, and the man, the Lord appointed them *a new law*, and expelled them from the garden He had made.

These three sentences, and the New Law, constitute *the foundation of the world*. This is a phrase which occurs in various passages of the Bible. It occupies a prominent place in the following text: "then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the

kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world” (Matt. 25:34). The words in the Greek are *απο καταβολης κοσμου*, which, more literally rendered, signify, *from laying the world's foundation*. The globe is the platform; the world that which is constituted, or built, upon it; and the Builder is God; for, “He that built all things is God” (Heb. 3:4). Now the world was not built out of nothing. The materials had been prepared by the work of the six days; and by the moral phenomena of the fall. At this crisis, there appeared a natural system of things, with two transgressors, in whom sin had enthroned itself; and who were endued with the power of multiplying such as themselves to an unlimited extent. This population, then, was either to act for itself under the uncontrolled dominion of sin; or, things must be so constituted as to bring it into order and subjection to the sovereignty of God. The result of the former alternative would have been to barbarize mankind, and to fill the earth with violence. This is demonstrated by what actually occurred before the flood when the divine constitution of things was corrupted and abolished by the world. Man when left to himself never improves. God made man upright; but look at the wretched specimens of humanity, which are presented in those regions where God has left them to their natural tendency, under the impulse of their uncontrolled propensities. Man thus abandoned of God, degenerates into an ignorant savage, ferocious as the beasts of prey.

If the Lord God had renounced all interest in the earth this would have been the consummation of His work. Man by his vices would have destroyed his own race. But, though transgression upon transgression marked his career, “God so loved the world” (Jn. 3:16), that He determined it should not perish, but should be rescued from evil in spite of itself. This He purposed to do in such a way as to make man reflect the divine nature in his character; and to display His own wisdom, glory, and power, in the earth. But chance could not bring this to pass. Human life, therefore, was not to be a mere chapter of accidents; but the result of a well-digested and unvarying plan. Things, then, were to be arranged according to this purpose; so that in their original constitution should be contained *the rudiments* of a “glorious manifestation;” which, as a grain of mustard seed, should so unfold themselves under the fostering hand of God, as to become “a tree, which is the greatest among herbs” (Matt. 13:31-32), in whose branches the family of man might be refreshed.

In the acorn, it is said, can be traced by aid of the microscope, the branches of the future oak. So in “the Rudiments of the World” are traceable the things of the future Kingdom of God. These rudiments, or

elements, are exhibited in the sentences upon the serpent, the woman, and the man; and in that institution styled, “the Way of the Tree of Life.” Out of these things were afterwards to arise the Kingdom of God; so that in constituting them, *a foundation was laid* upon which “the world to come” should be built; even that world of which Abraham was constituted the heir (Rom. 4:13); and which, when finished at the end of six days of a thousand years each, will manifest the woman’s Seed triumphant over the Serpent-power; resting from his work in the Sabbatism which remains for the people of God (Heb. 4:3, 8-9, 11).

The things laid, or fixed, in the rudimental constitution of the world, may be summarily stated in the following particulars:—

1. Sin in the flesh, the enemy of God, contending for the dominion of the world.
2. Mankind in a state of nature, subject to the propensities; and to pain, trouble, and death.
3. Labor and toil the condition of existence in the present state.
4. The subjection of woman to the lordship of man.

To these things was established a divine antagonism, by which they might be controlled; and a system of things elaborated in conformity with the purpose of God. This part of the foundation may be stated as,

1. The law and truth of God as expressed in “His Way,” demanding unreserved submission to its authority.
2. Mankind under the influence of this truth assuredly believed, contending for it.
3. Divine power exhibited in the punishment of men, and in the performance of His promises.

The action and re-action of these agencies upon one another was to produce,

1. An enmity and war in the earth between the Sin-power and the institution opposed to it.
2. A bloody persecution of the adherents of the truth.
3. The destruction of the Sin-power by a personage to be manifested for the purpose; and
4. The consequent victory of divine truth, and establishment of the Kingdom of God.

That the crisis of the fall was the period of laying the foundation of the world, in its civil, social, and spiritual relations, appears from the use of the phrase in the apostolic writings. The Lord Jesus, speaking of what was about to come upon the generation then living in Judea, said, “the blood of all the prophets shed from the foundation of the world shall be required

of this generation;" and to show to what period of the world he referred, he added by way of explanation, "from the blood of Abel" (Lk. 11:50-51), the prophet of his day. The phrase is also applied by the apostle to the work of the six days (Heb. 4:3-4), that is, as the basis, or substratum, in or upon which, the social and political system was constituted. There is further proof of the judgment of the transgressors being the institutional foundation of the world, in the words, "all that dwell upon the earth shall do homage to him," the ten-horned papal Beast, "whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb *slain from the laying of the world's foundation*" (Rev. 13:8). By this is signified, that, when the Lord God appointed coats of skins to cover the man and woman's shame, Lambs were slain, which they were taught to understand were representative of the Seed, who should be slain for the sins of all the faithful; and with whose righteousness they should be clothed, after the type of their covering by the skins of their sacrifices. Thus, from the institution of sacrifice in Paradise till the death of Jesus on the cross, he was typically slain; and the *accepted* worshippers, being full of faith in the divine promise like Abel and Enoch, understood to what the slaughtered lambs referred. Their names were consequently written in the remembrance of God (Mal. 3:16; Rev. 17:8; 20:12; 21:27), as inheritors of the kingdom; whose foundation was commenced in Paradise, and has been preparing ever since, that when finished it may be manifested "in Eden the garden of the Lord."

### THE CONSTITUTION OF SIN.

"The creature was made subject to evil, not willingly, but by the arranging in hope."

The introduction of *sin* into the world necessitated the constitution of things as they were laid in the beginning. If there had been no sin there would have been no "*enmity*" between God and man; and consequently no antagonism by which to educe good out of evil. Sin and evil are as cause and effect. God is the author of evil, but not of sin; for the evil is the punishment of sin. "I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, *and create evil*: I the Lord do all these things" (Isa. 45:7). "Shall there be evil in a city and the Lord hath not done it?" (Am. 3:6). The evil then to which man is subjected is the Lord's doing. War, famine, pestilence, flood, earthquake, disease, and death, are the terrible evils which God inflicts upon mankind for their transgressions. Nations cannot go to war when they please, any more than they can shake the earth at their will and

pleasure; neither can they preserve peace, when He proclaims war. Evil is the artillery with which He combats the enemies of His law, and of His saints; consequently, there will be neither peace nor blessedness for the nations, until sin is put down, His people avenged, and truth and righteousness be established in the earth.

This is the constituted order of things. It is the constitution of the world; and as the world is sin's dominion, or the kingdom of the adversary, it is the constitution of the kingdom of sin.

The word *sin* is used in two principal acceptations in the scripture. It signifies in the first place, "*the transgression of law*;" and in the next, it represents that physical principle of the animal nature, which is the cause of all its diseases, death, and resolution into dust. It is that in the flesh "*which has the power of death*;" and it is called *sin*, because the development, or fixation, of this *evil* in the flesh, was the result of transgression. Inasmuch as this evil principle pervades every part of the flesh, the animal nature is styled "sinful flesh," that is, *flesh full of sin*; so that *sin*, in the sacred style, came to stand for the substance called *man*. In human flesh "dwells no good thing" (Rom. 7:18, 17); and all the evil a man does is the result of this principle dwelling in him. Operating upon the brain, it excites the "propensities," and these set the "intellect" and "sentiments" to work. The propensities are blind, and so are the intellect and sentiments in a purely natural state; when, therefore, the latter operate under the sole impulse of the propensities, "the understanding is darkened through ignorance, because of the blindness of the heart" (Eph. 4:18). The nature of the lower animals is as full of this physical evil principle as the nature of man; though it cannot be styled *sin* with the same expressiveness; because it does not possess them as the result of their own transgression; the name, however, does not alter the nature of the thing.

A defective piece of mechanism cannot do good work. The principle must be perfect, and the adaptation true, for the working to be faultless. Man in his physical constitution is imperfect; and this imperfection is traceable to the physical organization of his flesh, being based on the principle of decay and reproduction from the blood; which, acted upon by the air, becomes the life of his flesh. All the phenomena which pertain to this arrangement of things is summed up in the simple word *sin*; which is, therefore, not an individual abstraction, but a concretion of relations in all animal bodies; and the source of all their physical infirmities. Now, the apostle says, that the flesh thinks — *το φρονημα της σαρκος*— that is, the brain, as all who think are well assured from their own consciousness. If then this thinking organ be commanded not to do what it is natural for

it to do under blind impulse, will it not naturally disobey? Now this disobedience is wrong, because what God commands to be done is right, and only right; so that “by His law is the knowledge of sin;” and this law, requiring an obedience which is not natural, flesh is sure to think in opposition to it. This is the philosophy of superstition — *religion in harmony with the thinking of the flesh*: while true religion is religion in accordance with the thoughts of God as expressed in His law. Hence, it need excite no astonishment that religion and superstition are so hostile; and that all the world should uphold the latter; while so few are to be found who are identified with the religion of God. They are as opposite as flesh and spirit.

Sin, I say, is a synonym for human nature. Hence, the flesh is invariably regarded as *unclean*. It is therefore written, “How can he be clean who is born of a woman?” (Job 25:4). “Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? Not one” (Job 14:4). “What is man that he should be clean? And he which is born of a woman that he should be righteous? Behold, God putteth no trust in His saints; yea, the heavens are not clean in His sight. How much more abominable and filthy is man, who drinketh iniquity like water?” (Job 15:14-16). This view of sin in the flesh is enlightening in the things concerning Jesus. The apostle says, “God *made him sin* for us, who knew no sin” (2Cor. 5:21); and this he explains in another place by saying, that “He sent His own Son *in the likeness of sinful flesh*, and for sin, condemned sin *in the flesh* (Rom. 8:3) in the offering of his body once” (Heb. 10:10, 12, 14). Sin could not have been condemned in the body of Jesus, if it had not existed there. His body was as unclean as the bodies of those he died for; for he was born of a woman, and “not one” can bring a clean body out of a defiled body; for “that,” says Jesus himself, “which is born of the flesh is flesh” (Jn. 3:6).

According to this physical law, the Seed of the woman was born into the world. The nature of Mary was as unclean as that of other women; and therefore could give birth only to “*a body*” like her own, though especially “*prepared of God*” (Heb. 10:10, 12, 14). Had Mary’s nature been immaculate, as her idolatrous worshippers contend, an immaculate body would have been born of her; which, therefore, would not have answered the purpose of God; which was to condemn sin in the flesh; a thing that could not have been accomplished, if there were no sin there.

Speaking of the conception and preparation of the Seed, the prophet as a typical person, says, “Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me” (Psa. 51:5). This is nothing more than affirming, that he was born of sinful flesh; and not of the pure and incorruptible angelic nature.

Sinful flesh being the hereditary nature of the Lord Jesus, he was a fit and proper sacrifice for sin; especially as he was himself “innocent of the great transgression,” having been obedient in all things. Appearing in the nature of the seed of Abraham (Heb. 2:16-18), he was subject to all the emotions by which we are troubled; so that he was enabled to sympathize with our infirmities (Heb. 4:15), being “made *in all things* like unto his brethren.” But, when he was “born of the spirit” in the quickening of his mortal body by the spirit (Rom. 8:11), he became a spirit; for “that which is born of the spirit *is spirit*.” Hence, he is “the Lord the Spirit,” incorruptible flesh and bones.

Sin in the flesh is hereditary; and entailed upon mankind as the consequence of Adam’s violation of the Eden law. The “*original sin*” was such as I have shown in previous pages. Adam and Eve committed it; and their posterity are suffering the consequence of it. The tribe of Levi paid tithes to Melchisedec many years before Levi was born. The apostle says, “Levi, who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.” Upon the same federal principle, all mankind ate of the forbidden fruit, being in the loins of Adam when he transgressed. This is the only way men can by any possibility be guilty of the original sin. Because they sinned in Adam, therefore they return to the dust from which Adam came —  $\epsilon\phi\omega$ , says the apostle, “*in whom* all sinned.” There is much foolishness spoken and written about “original sin.” Infants are made the subjects of a religious ceremony to regenerate them because of original sin; on account of which, according to Geneva philosophy, they are liable to the flames of hell for ever! If original sin, which is in fact sin in the flesh, were neutralized, then all “baptismally regenerated” babes ought to live for ever, as Adam would have done had he eaten of the Tree of Life after he had sinned. But they die; which is a proof that the “regeneration” does not “cure their souls;” and is, therefore, mere theological quackery.

Mankind being born of the flesh, and of the will of man, are born into the world under the constitution of sin. That is, they are the natural born citizens of Satan’s kingdom. By their fleshly birth, they are entitled to all that *sin* can impart to them. What creates the distinction of bodies politic among the sons of Adam? It is constitution, or covenant. By constitution, then, one man is English, and another American. The former, is British because he is born of the flesh under the British constitution. In this case, he is worthy of neither praise nor blame. He was made subject to the constitution, not willingly; but by reason of them, who chose that he should be born under it. But, when he comes of age, the same man may

become an American. He may put off the old man of the political flesh, and put on the new man, which is created by the constitution of the United States; so that by constitution, he becomes an American in every particular, but the accident of birth. This will be exact enough to illustrate what I am about to say.

There are two states, or kingdoms, in God's arrangements, which are distinguished by constitution. These are the kingdom of Satan and the kingdom of God. The citizens of the former are all *sinners*; the heirs of the latter are *saints*. Men cannot be born heirs by the will of the flesh; for natural birth confers no right to God's kingdom. Men must be born sinners before they can become saints; even as one must be born a foreigner before he can be an *adopted* citizen of the States. It is absurd to say that children are born holy, except in the sense of their being legitimate. None are born holy, but such as are born of the spirit into the kingdom of God. Children are born sinners or unclean, because they are born of sinful flesh; and "that which is born of the flesh is flesh," or sin. This is a misfortune, not a crime. They did not will to be born sinners. They have no choice in the case; for, it is written, "the creature," that is, the animal man, "was *made subject*, τη ματαιοτητι, *to the evil*, not willingly, but according to the *arranging* (δια τον υποταξαντα) *in hope*" (Rom. 8:20). This subjection to the evil, then, is referrible to the arranging, or constitution of things, which makes up the *κοσμος*, or world. Hence, the apostle says, "by Adam's disobedience the many were *made sinners*" (Rom. 5:19); that is, they were endowed with a nature like his, which had become unclean, as the result of disobedience; and, by the constitution of the economy into which they were introduced by the will of the flesh, they were constituted transgressors, before they were able to discern between right and wrong. Upon this principle, he that is born of sinful flesh is a sinner; as he that is born of english parents is an english child. Such a sinner is an heir of all that is derivable from sin. Hence, new born babes suffer all the evil of the peculiar department of Satan, or sin's, kingdom to which they belong. Thus, in the case of the Amalekites when the divine vengeance fell upon them, the decree was — "utterly destroy all that they have, and spare them not; but slay both man and woman, *infant and suckling*, ox and sheep, camel and ass" (1Sam. 15:3). The destruction of "infants and sucklings" is especially commanded in divers parts of scripture. Not because they were responsible transgressors; but, on the same principle, that men not only destroy all adult serpents that come in their way, but their thread-like progeny also; for in these is the germ of venomous and malignant reptiles. Had God spared the infants and sucklings of the Canaanitish nations,

when they had attained to manhood, even though they had been trained by Israel, they would have reverted to the iniquities of their fathers. Even Israel itself proved a stiff-necked and perverse race, notwithstanding all the pains bestowed upon their education by the Lord God; how much more perverse would such a seed of evil serpents as the Canaanitish offspring have turned out to be. It is a law of the flesh that “like produces like.” Wild and truthless men reproduce themselves in their sons and daughters. The experiment has been tried on Indian infants. They have been taken from their parents, and carefully educated in the learning and civilization of the white man; but when they have returned to their tribe as men, they have thrown off the habits of their patrons, and adopted the practices of savage life. The same tendency is seen in other animals. Hatch the eggs of the wild turkey under a tame one; and as soon as they are able to shift for themselves they will leave the poultry yard, and associate with the wild species of the woods. So strong is habit, that it becomes a law to the flesh, when continued through generations for a series of years.

But men are not only made, or constituted, sinners by the disobedience of Adam, but they become sinners even as he, *by actual transgression*. Having attained the maturity of their nature they become accountable and responsible creatures. At this crisis, they may be placed by the divine arranging in a relation to His word. It becomes to them a Tree of Life (Prov. 3:18), inviting them to “take, and eat and live for ever.” If, however, they prefer to eat of the world’s forbidden fruit, they come under the sentence of death in their own behalf. They are thus doubly condemned. They are “condemned already” to the dust as natural born sinners; and secondarily, condemned to a resurrection to judgment for rejecting the gospel of the kingdom of God; by which they become obnoxious to “*the SECOND Death*” (Rev. 20:14). Thus men are sinners in a twofold sense; first, by natural birth; and next, by transgression. In the former sense, it is manifest, they could not help themselves. They will not be condemned to the Second Death because they were born sinners; nor to any other pains and penalties than those which are the common lot of humanity in the present life. They are simply under that provision of the constitution of sin, which says, “dust thou art, and unto dust thou shalt return.” Now, if the Lord God had made no other arrangement than that expressed in the sentence upon the woman and the man, they and all their posterity in all their generations would have incessantly gone to dust; and there have remained for ever. “The wages of sin is death.” Sinful flesh confers no good thing upon its offspring; for holiness, righteousness, incorruptibility, and life for ever, are not hereditary. None of these are inherent in animal

flesh. Sinners *can only acquire* them by a conformity to the law of God; who offers them freely to all, who thirst after the water of life eternal (Rev. 22:17; Isa. 55:1-3).

### THE CONSTITUTION OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

“Constituted the righteousness of God in Christ.”

The former things being admitted, if men would be righteous in God’s esteem, they must become such *by constitution* also. The “good actions” of a pious sinner are mere “dead works;” for the actions of a sinner to be of any worth in relation to the future state, he must be “constituted righteous;” and this can only be by his coming under a constitution made and provided for the purpose. A stranger and foreigner from the commonwealth of the States, can only become a fellow-citizen with Americans, by taking the oath of abjuration, fulfilling the time of his probation, and taking the oath of allegiance according to the provisions of the constitution. Now, the Kingdom of God has a constitution as well as the Kingdom of Satan, or that province of it styled the United States. Before sinners come under it, they are characterized as “without Christ, being aliens from the *Commonwealth of Israel*, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God (*αθεοι* *atheists*) in the world” (Eph. 2:12-13, 19). They are termed “far off,” “strangers and foreigners” (Eph. 2:13, 19), “walking in the vanity of their mind, having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart” (Eph. 4:17-18). But, mark the sacred style descriptive of sinners after they have been placed under the constitution of Israel’s Commonwealth, which is the Kingdom of God. “You that were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ;” “through him you have access by one spirit to the Father; and are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God” — “fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of God’s promise *in Christ by the gospel*” (Eph. 3:6). In this remarkable contrast is discoverable a great change in *state* and *character* predicated of the same persons. How was this transformation effected? This question is answered by the phrase “*in Christ by the gospel*.” The “*in*” expresses the state; the “*by*,” the instrumentality by which the state and character are changed.

As the constitution of sin hath its root in the disobedience of the First Adam, so also hath the constitution of righteousness root in the obedience of the Second Adam. Hence, the apostle says, “as through one offence (sentence was pronounced) upon all men unto condemnation; so also

through one righteousness (sentence was pronounced) upon all men (that is, Jews and Gentiles) unto *a pardon of life*. For as through the disobedience of the one man *the many were constituted* (κατεσταθῆσαν) *sinners*; so also through the obedience of the one the many were *constituted righteous*" (Rom. 5:18-19). The two Adams are *two federal chiefs*; the first being figurative of the second in these relations (Rom. 5:14). All sinners are *in* the first Adam; and all the righteous, *in* the second, only on a different principle. Sinners were in the loins of the former when he transgressed; but not in the loins of the latter, when he was obedient unto death; therefore, "the flesh profiteth nothing." For this cause, then, for sons of Adam to become sons of God, they must be the subjects of an *adoption*, which is attainable only by some divinely appointed means.

The apostle then brings to light *two sentences*, which are co-extensive, but not co-etaneous in their bearing upon mankind. The one is a sentence of condemnation, which consigns "*the many*," both believing Jews and Gentiles, to the dust of the ground; the other is a sentence which affects the same "*many*," and brings them out of the ground again to return thither no more. Hence, of the saints it is said, "the body is dead because of sin; but the spirit (gives) life because of righteousness" (Rom. 8:10-11); for "since by a man came death, by a man also came a resurrection of dead persons (ἀναστασις νεκρῶν). For as in the Adam they all die, so also in the Christ shall they all be made alive. But every one in his own order: Christ the first fruits; afterward *they that are Christ's* at his coming" (1Cor. 15:21-23). It is obvious that the apostle is not writing of all the individuals of the human race; but only of that portion of them that become the subject of "*a pardon of life*," δικαιοῦσις ζωῆς. It is true, that all men do die; but it is not true that they are all the subject of pardon. Those who are pardoned are "*the many*," οἱ πολλοί, who are sentenced to live for ever. Of the rest we shall speak hereafter.

The sentence to pardon of life is through Jesus Christ. In being made a sacrifice for sin by the pouring out of his blood upon the cross, he was set forth as *a blood sprinkled mercy seat* to all believers of the gospel of the kingdom, who have faith in this remission of sins through the shedding of his blood. "He was delivered for our offences, and raised again for our justification" (Rom. 4:25); that is, for the pardon of those *who believe the gospel*; as it is written, "he that believeth the gospel and is baptized shall be saved" (Mark 16:15-16). Hence, "*the obedience of faith*" (Rom. 1:5), is made the condition of righteousness; and this obedience implies the existence of a "*law of faith*," as attested by that of Moses, which is "*the law of works*" (Rom. 3:27, 21). The law of faith says to him who believes

the gospel of the kingdom, “be renewed, and be ye every one of you baptized by the name (*ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματι*) of Jesus Christ for remission of sins” (Acts 2:38). Here is a command which meets a man as a dividing line between *the State of Sin* and *the State of Righteousness*. The obedience of faith finds expression *in the name of Jesus* as “the mercy seat through faith in his blood.” Hence the apostle says to the disciples in Corinth, “know ye not that *the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God*? Be not deceived; neither fornicators, idolators, adulterers, effeminate, abusers of themselves with mankind, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And *such were some of you*: but ye are *washed, sanctified, and made righteous* (*ἐδικαιώθητε*) *by the name* (*ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι*) of the Lord Jesus, and *by the spirit* (*ἐν τῷ πνεύματι*) of our God” (1Cor. 6:9-11). Thus, the spirit, which is put for the gospel of the kingdom and name, renewed these profligates; the divine law and testimony attested by the spirit with signs, and wonders, and divers miracles, and gifts (Heb. 2:3-4), and believed with a full assurance of conviction that worked in them by love to will and to do — caused them to be “*washed by the name*,” to be “*sanctified by the name*,” and to be “*made righteous by the name* of Jesus Christ.” I say *by the name*, for it is the same Greek particle, namely, “*ἐν*,” which precedes the words “the spirit,” and is translated “*by*” in the common version, that goes before “the name.” I have rendered them the same in both places; and upon the authority of the phrase “*washed by the name*,” I have translated *βαπτισθητω ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματι* *be ye baptized by the name*. It must be clear to any man, unspoiled by a vain and deceitful philosophy, that to be washed by a name is impossible, unless the individual have *faith in the name*, and be subjected to the use of a fluid in some way. Now, when a man is “*washed by the name of Jesus Christ*” there are three witnesses to the fact, by whose testimony every thing is established. These are the spirit, the water, and the blood, and they all agree in one statement. Jesus Christ was made manifest *by water* at his baptism (Jn. 1:31); and *by blood* in his death; and *by the spirit* in his resurrection: therefore, the spirit *who is the truth* (*τὸ πνεῦμα ἐστὶν ἡ ἀληθεια*), and the water, and the blood, or the truth concerning the Messiahship, sacrificial character, and resurrection of Jesus, are constituted the witnesses who bear testimony to a man’s being the subject of “the righteousness of God” (Rom. 1:17; 3:21-22, 25-26) set forth in the gospel of his kingdom. The testimony of these witnesses is termed “the witness of God,” which every believer of the kingdom and name hath as “*the witness in himself*” (1Jn. 5:6-10).

Water, then, is the medium in which the washing occurs. But, although

water is so accessible in all parts of the world where the gospel has been preached, it is one of the most difficult things under heaven to use it so as to *wash a man by the name of Jesus Christ*. What! says one, is it difficult to get a man to be dipped in water as a religious action? No; it is very easy. Thousands in society go into the water on very slender grounds. But going into the water, and having certain words pronounced over the subject, is not washing by the name. The difficulty lies, not in getting men to be dipped, but in *first* getting them to believe “the things concerning the kingdom of God and the Name of Jesus Christ” (Acts 8:12); or “the exceeding great and precious promises,” by the faith of which they can alone become the “partakers of the divine nature” (2Pet. 1:4). Without faith in these things there is no true washing, no sanctification, or purification, from moral defilement, and no constitution of righteousness by the name of Jesus, for the sons of men; for, says the scripture, “without faith it is impossible to please God.”

It was the renewing efficacy of the exceeding great and precious promises of God assuredly believed, that changed the gay and profligate Corinthians into “the sanctified by Christ Jesus, called saints;” of whom, it is testified, that “hearing, they believed and were baptized” (Acts 18:8). Now, to these baptized believers he writes, and tells them that “God *made* (*εποίησεν*) Jesus, who knew not sin, to be sin (that is, sinful flesh) for them, that they might be *constituted* (*γινώσται*) God’s righteousness *in him*” (2Cor. 5:21); so that, being introduced into him (for an individual cannot be *in* a federal person unless *introduced into* him) the crucified and resurrected Jesus became “the Lord their righteousness” (Jer. 23:6); as it is written, “of him, Corinthians, are ye *IN* Christ Jesus, who of God is *constituted* (*εγενήθη*) for us wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption” (1Cor. 1:30). So that, whosoever is in him, is said to be “*complete in him;*” in whom he is circumcised “*in putting off* THE BODY OF THE SINS *of the flesh;*” that is, *all past sins*; being buried with Christ in the baptism, in which also he rises with him through the belief of the power of God evinced in raising him from among the dead (Col. 2:10-12).

Now, because the unconstituted, or unrighteous, cannot inherit the kingdom of God, the law is revealed which says, “*ye must be born again;*” for, says the King, “except a man be born again he cannot behold the kingdom of God.” This saying is unintelligible to men whose thinking is guided by the flesh. They cannot comprehend “how these things can be:” and, though they *profess* to be “teachers of Israel,” “Masters of Arts,” and “Bachelors,” and “Doctors of Divinity,” and of “Canon and Civil Law,” they are as mystified upon the subject of “the new birth,” as

Nicodemus himself. But to those who understand “the word of the kingdom” these “heavenly things” are distinguished by the obviousness and simplicity of truth. To be born again, as the Lord Jesus expounds it, is to be “born of water and the spirit;” as it is written, “except a man be born *out of* water (ἐξ ὕδατος) and of spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God” (Jn. 3:3-10). This is surely very explicit, and very intelligible; who can misunderstand it, unless it be against his will to receive it!

The New Birth, like the old one of the flesh, is not an abstract principle, but a process. It begins with the begetting and ends with the having been born. A son of God is a character, which is developed out of the “incorruptible seed” (1Pet. 1:23) of God, sown into the fleshy table of the heart (Matt. 13:19). When this seed, or word of the Kingdom, is received, it begins to work in a man until he becomes a believer of the truth. When things have come to this pass, he is a changed man. He has acquired a new mode of thinking; for he thinks in harmony with the thoughts of God as revealed in His law and testimony. He sees himself, and the world around him, in a new light. He is convinced of sin; and experiences an aversion to the things in which he formerly delighted. His views, disposition, temper, and affections, are transformed. He is humble, child-like, teachable, and obediently disposed; and his simple anxiety is, to know what God would have him to do. Having ascertained this, he does it; and in doing it is “*born out of the water.*” Having been begotten of the Father by the word of truth (Jas. 1:18), and born of water, the first stage of the process is completed. He is *constitutionally* “in Christ.”

When a child is born, the next thing is to train it up in the way it should go, that when it is old it may not depart from it. This is also the arrangement of God in relation to those who are born out of water into His family on earth. He disciplines and tries them, that He may “exalt them in due time.” Having believed the gospel and been baptized, such a person is required to “walk worthy of the vocation,” or calling, “wherewith he has been called” (Eph. 4:1), that by so doing he may be “accounted worthy” of being “born of spirit,” that he may become “spirit,” or a spiritual body; and so enter the kingdom of God, crowned with “glory, honor, incorruptibility, and life” (Rom. 2:7). When, therefore, such a believer comes *out* of the ground by a resurrection from among the dead, the spirit of God, worked by the Lord Jesus, first opens the grave, and forms him in the image, and after the likeness of Christ; and then gives him life. He is then an incorruptible and living man, “equal to the angels;” and like them capable of reflecting the glory of Him that made him. This is the end of the process. He is like Jesus himself, the great exemplar of God’s family,

born out of water by the moral power of the truth; and out of the grave by the physical power of spirit; but all things of God through Jesus Christ the Lord.

In the way described, sinners are transformed into saints; and it is the only way; their conversion being the result of the transforming influence of "the testimony of God." Those who are ignorant of "the law and the testimony," and who yet claim to be saints, and "teachers of divine mysteries," may demur *in toto* to this conclusion, because "in saying this thou condemnest us also." But truth knows no respect of persons; and while the oracles of God declare, that men are "renewed by knowledge," and "alienated from the life of God through ignorance," I feel entrenched impreguably in the position here assumed. According to the constitution of the human intellect, the knowledge of truth must precede the belief of it. There is no exception to this. If cases be cited as exceptions, the faith is spurious, and not that with which God is pleased. It is credulity; the faith of opinion, such as characterizes the spiritual philosophy of the age.

Lastly, the *act* demanded of a *renewed* sinner by the constitution of righteousness, that he may be inducted into Christ and so "constituted the righteousness of God in him," is *a burial in water into death*. The energy of the word of truth is twofold. It makes a man "*dead to sin*" and "*alive to God*." Now, as Christ died to sin once and was buried, so the believer having become dead to sin, must be buried also; for after death burial. The death and burial of the believer is connected with the death and burial of Christ by the individual's faith in the testimony concerning them. Hence, he is said to be "dead with Christ," and to be "buried with Christ;" but, how buried? "*By baptism into death*," saith the scripture. But is this all? By no means; for the object of the burial in water is not to extinguish animal life; but, by preserving it, to afford the believer scope to "walk in newness of life," moral and intellectual. He is, therefore, *raised up* out of the water. This action is representative of his *faith* in the resurrection of Jesus; and of his *hope*, that as he had been planted with him in the similitude of his death, he shall hereafter be also in the likeness of his resurrection (Rom. 6:3-11), and so enter the kingdom of God. To such persons the scripture saith, "ye are all sons of God *in Christ Jesus through the faith*;" and the ground of this honorable and divine relationship is assigned in these words; "*For as many of you as have been baptized INTO Christ have put on Christ: and if ye be Christ's, then are ye the seed of Abraham, and heirs according to the promise*" (Gal. 3:26-29). They have thus received the spirit of adoption by which they can address God as their Father who is in heaven.

### THE TWO PRINCIPLES.

“With the mind I myself serve the Law of God;  
but with the flesh the Law of Sin.”

Although a sinner may have been “delivered from the power of darkness,” or ignorance; and have been “translated into” (Col. 1:13) the hope of “the Kingdom of God and of his Christ” (Rev. 11:15), by faith in the divine testimony and baptism into Christ — yet, if he turn his thoughts back into his own heart, and note the impulses which work there, he will perceive a something that, if he were to yield to it, would impel him to the violation of the divine law. These impulses are styled “*the motions of sins*” (Rom. 7:5). Before he was enlightened, they “worked in his members,” until they were manifested in evil action, or sin; which is termed, “bringing forth fruit unto death.” The remote cause of these “motions” is that physical principle, or quality, of the flesh, styled indwelling sin, which returns the mortal body to the dust; and that which excites the latent disposition is the law of God forbidding to do thus and so; for, “I had not known sin; but by the law.”

Now, while a righteous man feels this law involuntarily at work in his members, the law of sin, or of nature within him, he also perceives there a something which condemns “the motions of sins,” and suppresses them; so that they shall not impel him to do what he ought not to do. The best of men, and I quote Paul as an illustration of the class, are conscious of the co-existence of these hostile principles within them. “I find,” says he, “a law, that, when I would do good, *evil* is present with me.” Yes; *the principle of evil*, and *the principle of good*, are the two laws, which abide in the saints of God so long as they continue subject to mortality.

The reader is invited to re-peruse pages ninety and ninetyone on the subject of these laws, as it will prevent repetition in this place. The law of sin and death is *hereditary*, and derived from the federal sinner of the race; but the law of the mind is an intellectual and moral *acquisition*. The law of sin pervades every particle of the flesh; but in the thinking flesh, it reigns especially in the propensities. In the savage, it is the only law to which he is subject; so that with his flesh he serves only the law of sin and death. This is to him “*the light within*,” which is best illustrated by the darkness of Egypt, which might be felt. It was this internal light, which illuminated “the princes of the world, who crucified the Lord of glory.” It shined forth in the philosophy of Plato, and in the logic of Aristotle, who walked in it, while “dwelling in the land of the shadow of death” (Isa. 9:2); and, it is “the light within” all babes who are born of blood, of the will of

the flesh, and of man under the constitution of sin, in all countries of the world.

Now, the scripture saith, “the commandment of God is a lamp; and His law is light” (Prov. 6:23); so that the prophet says, “Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path” (Psa. 119:105). And to this agrees the saying of the apostle, that the sure word of prophecy is a light that shineth in a dark place (2Pet. 1:19). Now, Isaiah testifies, that the word is made up of God’s law and testimony, and that those who do not speak according to it, have no light in them (Isa. 8:20). This is the reason that the savage has no light in him; because he is intensely ignorant of the law of God. Light does not emanate from within; for sin, blood, and flesh, can give out none. It can only reflect it after the fashion of a mirror. The light is not in the mirror; but its surface is so constituted, that when light falls upon it, it can throw it back, or reflect it, according to the law of light, that the images of objects are seen on the surface, whence the light proceeding from the objects, is last reflected to the eye. Neither is light innate in the heart. This is simply *a tablet*; a polished tablet, or mirror, in some; but a tarnished, rusty, tablet, in others. It is called “the fleshy tablet of the heart.” It was polished in the beginning, when God formed man after His likeness; but sin, “the god of this world,” hath so tarnished it, that there are but few who reflect His similitude.

No; it is a mere conceit of the fleshy mind, that man is born into the world with light within; which requires only to be cherished, to be sufficient to guide him in the right way. God only is the source of light; He is the glorious illuminator of the moral universe; and He transmits His enlightening radiance through the medium sometimes of angels, sometimes of prophets, and at others, through that of His Son and the apostles, by His all pervading spirit. Hence, it is that the scripture saith, “God is light,” whose truth “enlightens the eyes.” But, what is the truth? It is “the light of the glorious gospel of Christ,” who is the polished incorruptible fleshy mirror, which reflects the Image of God; an image, at present, but obscurely impressed upon the fleshy tablets of our hearts; because we know only in part, perceiving things by the eye of faith, until hope shall disappear in the possession of the prize.

God, then, is the *source* of light; the gospel of the kingdom in the name of Jesus is *the light*; and Christ is the *medium* through which it shines; hence he is styled, THE SUN OF RIGHTEOUSNESS; also, “the true light, who enlighteneth every man that cometh into the world;” “a light to enlighten the Gentiles, and the glory of His people Israel.” Now, the enlightening of every man is thus explained by the apostle. “God,” saith he, “who

commanded the light to shine out of darkness, it is He who hath shined into our (the saints') hearts, with the illumination of *the knowledge* (προς φωτισμον της γνωσεως) of the glory of God in the person of Jesus Christ" (2Cor. 4:6). But "every man" is not enlightened by this glorious knowledge; for to some it is hid. The tablets of their hearts are so corroded and encrusted with opaque and sordid matter, that they are destitute of all reflecting power. Light will not shine in a black surface. Hence, saith the apostle, "if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: in whom the god of the world hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ should shine into them" (2Cor. 4:3-4). He darkens the tablets of their hearts by "the care of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches" (Mat. 13:22); and thus prevents them from opening their ears to hear the words of eternal life.

If a man have light, then, it is very evident that it is *acquired from without*, and not an hereditary spark within. When the Lord Jesus appeared in Israel "he shined in the darkness." This nation was so darkened by the propensities and human tradition, that they did not perceive the light when it shined among them; "the darkness comprehended it not" (Jn. 1:5). If this were the condition of Israel, how intensely dark must have been the world at large! Still the gentile mind was not so totally eclipsed as that of the savage. The nations of the Four Empires had been greatly mixed up with the Israelites in their history; so that the light of their law must have been considerably diffused among them; though not given to them for their obedience. Hence, "the work of the law was written upon their hearts" to some extent; and created in them "a conscience," by the thoughts of which they accused and excused one another (Rom. 2:14-15).

This shining of the truth in the darkness of the nations was considerably increased by the apostolic labors; for "their sound went into all the land, and their words unto the ends of the habitable." (της οικουμενης, or *Roman Empire*) (Rom. 10:18). Now, although this light was almost extinguished by the apostasy, lamps were still kept burning in its presence (Rev. 11:4); so that the eclipse was not so total as that the darkness of the gentile mind was reduced to a savage state. When the scriptures were again disseminated in the tongues of the nations in the sixteenth century, the light of truth began again to stream in upon them. The scriptures were then like a book just fallen from heaven. The world was astonished at their contents; but "comprehended them not." Men discussed it, tortured it, perverted it, fought about it; until the stronger party established the foundation of the world as at present constituted. This world, called "Christendom," is much after the order of things in the

days of Jesus. Were he to appear now, he would “shine in the darkness” as when among the Jews. These professed to know God, while in works they denied Him. Their clergy said, “*We see*,” but Jesus characterized them as “blind leaders of the blind;” therefore, “their sin remained.” They boasted in the law; yet through breaking it, dishonored God. They professed to be more conscientious and pious than Jesus; but he charged them with being hypocrites and serpents. They strained at gnats, and swallowed camels; and gave tithe of mint and cummin, and despoiled the fatherless and the widow. And, “like priest like people.” They crowded to the synagogues and the temple in splendid apparel. The bejewelled worshippers exhibited themselves in conspicuous seats; while the poor stood, or if seated, sat on footstools near the door. They made a great show of piety, sang the psalms of David with holy rapture, devoutly listened to the reading of the law and the prophets; and expelled Jesus and his apostles with great fury from their midst, when they showed the meaning of them. With the worship of God they combined the worship of Mammon. They heaped up gold and silver, and apparel till it was moth eaten; oppressed the hireling in his wages; and ground the faces of the poor.

Such was the state of “the church” while Jesus and his apostles were members of it; and such is its condition now that “he standeth at the door, and knocks.” “*The Church*” of the 19th century, by which I understand, not the “*One Body*” (Eph. 4:4); but that thousand-headed monster presented by the ecclesiastical aggregate of “Christendom;” is that Laodicean antitype which is neither cold nor hot, but lukewarm, and which saith, “I am rich, and increased in goods, and have need of nothing; but knows not that it is wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked” (Rev. 3:17); the sputa once “spewed out of the Lord’s mouth.” Its eyes are blinded by the god of the world. Its zeal for faction; its devotion to Mammon; its ignorance of the scriptures; and its subjection to the dogmas and commandments of men — have made its heart fat, its ears heavy, and closed its eyes. “The people of the Lord, the people of the Lord, are we!” ascends as its cry to heaven from myriads of throats; but in the tablets of their hearts the light of the glorious gospel of Christ’s kingdom and name, finds no surface of reflection. Many who mean well, lament “the decline of spirituality in the churches;” but they fail to perceive the cause. The scriptures have fallen into comparative disuse among them. They are superseded by shallow speculations — mere unintelligible pulpit disquisitions, the contradictory thinking of the flesh, trained to excogitate the creedism of the community that glorifies itself in the orator of its choice. *The gospel is neither believed nor preached in the*

*churches*. In fact, it is hid from their eyes; and the time is come, to break off the wild olive branch for its saplessness; to cut off these churches for their unbelief (Rom. 11:20, 22, 25).

The principle, or spirit, that works in these children of disobedience, is neither the law of sin as exhibited in the savage; nor the law of God as it appears in the genuine disciples of Christ. It is a blending of the two; so as to make of none effect (Matt. 15:6, 9) the little truth believed, as far as inheriting the kingdom of God is concerned. This proportion of truth in the public mind is the measure of its morality, and exegetical of its conscience; and constitutes that scintillation, or “light within,” which is struck out by the collision of ideas in the world around. Educational bias makes men what they are — sinners, whose habitude of thought and action is “pious,” or impious, civilized or savage, according to the school in which their young ideas have been taught to shoot. The divine law and testimony alone can turn these into reflectors of the moral image and similitude of God.

The “*intellect*” and “*sentiments*” of the apostle’s brain, constituting “the fleshly tablet of his heart,” had been inscribed by the Spirit of the living God, in a way that all believers are not the subject of. He was inspired; and consequently received much of “the light of the knowledge of the glory of God” by divine suggestion, or revelation (Gal. 1:11-12); others receive the same knowledge, in words spoken, or written, by “earthen vessels” like himself, in whom “this treasure” was deposited (2Cor. 4:7). The means by which the knowledge is communicated matters not, so that it is written on the heart. When it gets possession of this, it forms that “*mind, or mode of thinking and feeling* (*νοῦς*) with which the apostle said, he “served the Law of God.” Being renewed by the divine testimony, his intellect and sentiments were sure to think and feel in harmony with the thoughts of God. Nevertheless, his “propensities” were only checked in their emotions. He kept his body under. This was all that he could do; for no spiritual perfection of thought and feeling could eradicate from the particles of his flesh the all-pervading principle of its corruption. While, therefore, with his mind he served the Law of God; his flesh obeyed the law of sin, which finally mingled it with its parent dust.

This *new mode of thinking and feeling* created in a true believer by the divine law and testimony, is variously designated in scripture. It is styled, “a clean heart and a right spirit” (Psa. 51:10); “a new spirit” and “a heart of flesh” (Eze. 11:19); the “inward man” (2Cor. 4:16; Rom. 7:22); “new creature” (2Cor. 5:17); “the new man created in righteousness and true holiness;” and “renewed by knowledge after the image of Him that created

him” (Eph. 4:24; Col. 3:10); the “hidden man of the heart” (1Pet. 3:4); and so forth. This new and hidden man is manifested in the life, which is virtuous as becomes the gospel. He delights in the law of the Lord, and speaks often of His testimonies. He denies himself of all ungodliness, and worldly lusts; and walks soberly, righteously and godly in the world. His hope is the glorious manifestation of Jesus Christ, with the crown of righteousness, even glory, honor, and immortality, promised to all who look for him, and “*love his appearing,*” and desire his kingdom (Tit. 2:11-14; 2Tim. 4:1,8; Heb. 9:28). Nevertheless, the law of sin, through the weakness of the flesh, fails not to remind him of imperfection. Being delivered from the fear of death, he looks forward to it as to the period of his change; knowing, that when he falls asleep in the dust, he will afterwards be delivered from the principle of evil, by a resurrection to incorruptibility and unalloyed existence in the Paradise of God.

## Chapter Five — Religion, and Immortality

IMMORTALITY IN THE PRESENT STATE A POSITIVE EVIL. — IMMORTALITY IN MISERY UNSCRIPTURAL. — THE PROFESSING WORLD RELIGIOUS FROM FEAR. — THE WORLD'S RELIGIONS USEFUL AS A SYSTEM OF ECCLESIASTICAL POLICE. — THE RELIGION OF CHRIST DESTITUTE OF ALL WORLDLY GOODS TILL HIS RETURN, WHEN IT WILL POSSESS ALL THINGS. — THE DOCTRINE OF IMMORTALITY A DIVINE REVELATION. — THE HEATHENS BAFFLED IN THEIR ENDEAVORS TO DISCOVER IT. — THE MOSAIC CHERUBIM GOD'S THRONE IN ISRAEL. — THE CHERUBIM OF EZEKIEL AND JOHN. — THE CHERUBIC VEIL. — THE FACES OF THE LORD. — THE FLAMING SWORD. — ILLUSTRATED BY EZEKIEL'S DESCRIPTION OF THE GLORY OF THE GOD OF ISRAEL. — THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE SPIRITUAL BODY. — THE WAY OF THE TREE OF LIFE. — THE ETYMOLOGY OF THE WORD **RELIGION**. — FALSE RELIGION BASED UPON THE IDEA OF APPEASING THE WRATH OF GOD. — GOD ALREADY RECONCILED TO THE WORLD. — THE "WORD OF RECONCILIATION" COMMITTED TO THE APOSTLES IN THE BEGINNING. — THE APOSTLES THE ONLY AMBASSADORS OF CHRIST. — "THE WORD" PREACHED BY THE APOSTLES ENTRUSTED TO THE DISCIPLES OF CHRIST. — "CLERGY" AND "LAITY" DISTINCTIONS OF THE APOSTASY. — RELIGION DEFINED. — ITS GRAND DESIDERATUM. — NO TRUE RELIGION WITHOUT BELIEF OF THE TRUTH. — THE WORD "FAITH" SCRIPTURALLY DEFINED. — HOW FAITH COMES. — THE "RELIGIOUS WORLD" INFIDEL OF "THE FAITH." — "LOVE" SCRIPTURALLY DEFINED BY "OBEDIENCE." — THE RELIGIOUS WORLD DESTITUTE OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD. — RELIGION CONTEMPORARY ONLY WITH SIN. — SUMMARY OF PRINCIPLES.

**T**HE Lord God, having arranged the foundation of the world, in the sentences pronounced upon the transgressors; and commenced the preparation of the kingdom in the stipulations of the New Law: decreed their expulsion from the garden eastward in Eden. As the Serpent had said, the man had become "as the gods," or Elohim, "to know good and evil," in consequence of eating the forbidden fruit. He had known good only in his novitiate; but, being lifted up with pride, he had fallen into the condemnation of the devil (1Tim. 3:6), and had come to know also by experience both sorrow and pain. This was a great calamity; but not so great as that a greater might not befall him, even in Paradise. He had eaten of one tree, and his presumption might cause him to take and eat of the other. The consequences of this eating, superadded to the first, would have rendered his situation still more deplorable than it was. He now knew evil, as the Elohim had done before him; but there was hope of deliverance from it when he should return to the dust whence he was taken; but if he should eat of the Tree of the Lives, this hope would be cut off; and he would live for ever the subject of weeping, sorrow, and pain. The misery of being the subject of evil for ever is forcibly expressed by Job. When reduced to the deepest distress, he laments, saying, "When I say, my bed shall comfort me, my couch shall ease my complaint; then Thou scarest me with dreams, and terrifiest me through visions: so that my soul chooseth strangling, and death rather than my life. I loathe it; *I would not live alway*: let me alone; for my days are vanity" (Job 7:13-16). But, if

Adam had eaten of the Tree of Life, when reduced to such misery as this, he would have sought death, but it would have fled from him. He would have found no deliverance. This, however, would not have been the worst of it. He would have involved all his posterity in the same interminable calamity. The earth would at length have become crowded with undying generations of sensual and devilish men; who, if any virtue should survive, would afflict it a hundred fold. For this awful consummation there would have been no remedy, but to break up the fountains of the abyss, and cast them down under chains of intense darkness, after the example of the terrene angels who sinned under a previous constitution of the globe.

But, the repetition of the scenes of the pre-Adamæral drama was not designed, although men were afterwards permitted to imitate it with a similar result; with this difference, however, that the race of the angels was one generation, while that of men was composed of many. To prevent, then, the replenishment of the earth with undying sinners, the Lord God said to the Elohim, "Behold, the man *has become as one of us*, to know good and evil: and now *lest he* put forth his hand, and take also of the Tree of the Lives, and eat, and *live for ever*: therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So He drove out the man." This is a very remarkable passage of scripture. It contains much in few words. The points which stand out, shining like two stars, are the acknowledgement that *man had become as the gods* by his offence; and secondly, that he was expelled from Paradise *that he might not live for ever*. I shall defer to another place the exposition of the things suggested by his god-likeness in evil; and after what has been already said on the tree of lives, but little need be added respecting his exclusion from present immortality. I would, however, so far anticipate another part of this work as to say here, that the finality of creation, providence, and redemption is, *man upon the earth, glorious, honorable, and immortal, in a state of unmingled good*. It was because God loved man, and out of mercy to him, that He drove him out of the garden. Had He been actuated by malignity (a feeling by the bye that has no place in the heart of God) He would have left him free to involve himself in everlasting misery by eating of the tree of lives. But He did not create the man for such a destiny; nor did He subject his posterity to evil by a stern necessity, that it might in any mode of existence be consigned to interminable torment of mind, or body, or of both. The creed that inculcates this is God-dishonoring; and expresses the foolish thoughts of sinful flesh, unenlightened by His law and testimony. It is the vapor of the pagan mind, adopted by the Apostasy, and transfused into the symbols

of its credulity. As it knows not how to display the divine character in any other light than the propensities, the faintly illumined intellect, and the perverted sentiments of the flesh exhibit; it presents God to the sons of men, as more like the Saturn, or Moloch, of the heathens, who devoured their own offspring, in shrieks and groans; than as one who so loves the world, that He beseeches it to be reconciled to Him (2Cor. 5:19-20); and to accept without money or price, the exceeding great and precious things He has in store. Thus, the “*religious world*” is ruled by terror. The little faith it professes, works not by love (Gal. 5:6) to the purification of its heart (Acts 15:9); but by the unceasing apprehension of burning in molten lava through endless ages. It works by “fear, which hath torment,” and debases the soul; so that were it not for its fears, it would be honest and confess that it cared neither for God nor His religion. But there is no fear in love; for perfect love casteth out fear. The world of professors, therefore, deceives itself in supposing that it loves God. “He that feareth is not made perfect in love” (1Jn. 4:17-18). It loves Him not, for its conscience is defiled. “Love is the fulfilling of the law.” Its “doubts and fears” demonstrate its consciousness of sin uncovered; and that it either knows not what the truth is, or knowing it, neglects, or refuses, to obey it. It is an egregious contradiction to confess with the same breath, that we love God, and are yet afraid of Him! Was Adam afraid of God so long as he continued obedient? As soon, however, as he sinned, fear seized upon him, and he fled from the sound of His voice, and hid himself. The righteous man’s fear of God is the fear of offending one he loves. God is terrible only to His enemies. His sons and daughters confide in Him with the affection of children; and He protects them with all the love and jealousy of His holy and blessed name.

Being ignorant of “the exceeding great and precious promises” relating to the kingdom of God, the leaders of the people know not in what other way to move them to “get religion,” as their phrase is. Hence, they pretend to preach “the terrors of the law.” But “religion” got by such a process is worth nothing. Nay; I will retract this. It is worth something. A religion of terror, so long as it is believed, is useful as a system of *ecclesiastical police*; which, associated with the civil and military forces, assists materially in keeping the world in awe. But for the fear of what may be hereafter, professors would be as lawless as the antediluvian giants; and thus, by the ecclesiastical antagonism of society being destroyed, the earth would be filled with violence as before the flood. Superstition is useful in maintaining order until the period shall arrive to supersede it by “wisdom and knowledge,” which will be the stability of the times pertaining to the

kingdom of God (Isa. 33:6). But as a means of inheriting this kingdom, and of entitling men to the crown of righteousness, a religion which works by terror is utterly worthless. Remove the terror, and the religion's gone; except in so far, indeed, as the possession of it is necessary to the preservation of its "temporalities," "vested interests," and worldly advantages. But, the "pure and undefiled religion" of God has no present temporalities, or worldly interests. It has no "lands, tenements and hereditaments;" nor "states," colleges, or "sacred edifices." It is like the Son of God in the days of his flesh; homeless, houseless, and poverty-stricken among the sons of men. It has great riches, and good things in store for the poor in this world *who are rich in faith* (Jas. 2:5); it *promises* them the possession of the world (1Cor. 3:22) with all the honor, and glory, and riches of it, with endless life for the enjoyment of them; but, it requires faith in God with filial obedience to His law, in a time of tribulation (Acts 14:22; 2Tim. 3:12), as the condition of the inheritance. It is perfectly absurd to imagine, that men who are revelling in all the luxuries, conveniences, and comforts of life; enjoying the honor, glory, and friendship of the world, as do the ecclesiastics of antichristendom in their several ranks, orders, and degrees; to suppose, I say, that such can inherit the kingdom of God with Jesus, and that "cloud of witnesses," of whom Paul says "the world was not worthy," is preposterous. If men would reign with Christ they must believe his doctrine, and suffer with him (2Tim. 2:12), in enduring persecution for the word's sake (Mk. 10:29-30; Lk. 18:29). They must separate themselves from "the churches," both state and non-conformist, which have a name to live, but are dead in trespasses and sins. The whole system is rotten; and awaits only the manifestation of the Lord's presence to be abolished with signal marks of his displeasure. Therefore, let all honest men, lay and clerical, who shall believe the truth, come out from among them, and be separate. Better stand alone for the kingdom of God's sake, than be numbered with the multitude in the day of Christ, who will be denied permission to "eat of the tree of life and live for ever."

When man was expelled from Paradise, the Lord God, apprehending some new act of presumption, placed a guard over the tree of lives. This tree, it will be remembered, was planted *in the midst* of the garden. Now, when Adam was driven out, "the Lord placed *at the east* of the garden of Eden, CHERUBIM, and a *flaming sword* which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life." This would seem to indicate that Adam was driven out in an easterly direction; had he gone westward, the tree of life would have been between him and the Cherubim; so that it would still have

appeared accessible, and have tempted him to try to get at it; which would doubtless have been his destruction. The cherubim and sword were to guard *the Way of the Tree*, so that it could not be approached. If they were disposed to make a circuit to avoid the Cherubim, the flaming sword, or devouring flame, flashed on every side; “it turned every way to keep it” from being invaded by their presumption. From this arrangement, they either saw the tree of life no more; or, saw it only in the distance. The latter is more probable. The sight of it from time to time would remind them of what they had lost; and, from what they had learned of the effect producible upon the eater of its fruit, it suggested the possibility of mortal man *putting on immortality*. This was a thing to be desired. But they could not get at the tree; how could they then attain it? There were but two of them, and neither of them could answer the question. There were no scriptures testifying to them as to us, “this is the way, walk ye in it.” They were ignorant of “the way leading unto life” (Matt. 7:14); and, if they had not been “*taught of God*,” they would have remained ignorant of it for ever. The thinking of the flesh could never have discovered it; for the obtaining of immortality involved the belief and practice of things which it was utterly impossible for the heart of man to conceive. We have an illustration of this in the endeavor of the heathen philosophers to solve the problem. Being ignorant of God’s knowledge they ran into the most absurd speculations. They thought that immortality was a sort of ghost inside of a man that went to the fields of Elysium when death dissolved its union with the body. They regarded this innate principle as a particle of the divine essence from which proceeded all virtuous actions; while vice was the natural result of the operation of the matter of the body, which was essentially malignant. The apostle refers to this in part, when he says, “professing themselves to be wise, they became fools” (Rom. 1:22). Hence, he styles “the wisdom of the wise,” “foolishness;” and, as the Corinthians had received the gospel of the kingdom, which teaches a very different doctrine, he inquires of them, “hath not God made foolish the wisdom of the world?” (1Cor. 1:20). Has He not shown the absurdity of their speculations about “*souls*,” “immortality,” and “*the nature of the gods*?” They had no idea of immortality being conferred only upon men, who might be accounted worthy of a certain kingdom. This was a doctrine which the flesh with all its thinking, and with all its logic, had no conception of. It never thought of the kingdom of God and the name of a particular personage, as the channel through which immortality was to flow. It was lost in reveries about Elysium and Tartarus; and the river Styx which flowed between them; and about Charon and his ferry-boat; and

ghosts; and three-headed Cerberus; and the snake-haired furies; and Pluto “king of hell.” But, of “glory, honor, incorruptibility, and life,” an incorruptible and undefiled inheritance, the recompense of reward to the subjects of a righteousness by faith — of such a “prize” as this to be sought after by doing the will of God, they were as utterly ignorant as an unborn babe. Well might the apostle say in the language of the prophet, “eye hath not seen, ear hath not heard, neither have entered into the heart of men, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him. But God hath revealed them *to us* by His spirit” (1Cor. 2:9-16); that is, to those who received the gospel of the kingdom.

*Immortality*, then, and *the way to it*, are things about which man must have remained for ever ignorant, so long as their discovery depended upon the thinking of the flesh. In other words, they are matters purely of divine testimony; and as faith is the belief of testimony, men can have no *faith* in them beyond what is stated in the written word of God. The carnal mind, by reflecting upon its own consciousness, may be “*of opinion*” that what it terms “I myself” is immaterial *because it thinks*, and “therefore immortal;” but beyond this it can never go. Opinion implies doubt; for if a matter be beyond doubt, it is no longer opinion, but faith or knowledge. Where, then, is the man, be he philosopher or theologian, who can demonstrate the existence of an “immortal soul” in the animal man by a “thus it is written,” or a “thus saith the Lord?” A few phrases in scripture may be twisted, and tortured into *an inference*, which however becomes lighter than vanity before the direct testimonies of the word to the contrary. With these words, then, by way of preface, I shall proceed to offer a few remarks upon

### THE CHERUBIM.

But little is said about the *Cherubim* in the Mosaic narrative. The word is a plural noun, and represents therefore more objects than one. But, in what did this plurality consist? I should say, judging from a text in the next chapter, that it had especial regard to a plurality of *faces*; for when the Lord God sentenced Cain to a fugitive and vagabond life, the fratricide answered, “behold, then, from THY FACES (*plural in the Hebrew*) shall I be hid” (Gen. 4:14). That is, “I shall no more be permitted to come before the Cherubic faces, which Thou hast placed at the east of the garden, to present an offering for my sin.” As he truly observed, “mine iniquity is greater than that it may be forgiven.” He was exiled from the Faces of God still further to the east as a murderer doomed to eternal death (1Jn. 3:15) as the end of his career.

That the faces were connected with the Cherubim seems unquestionable from other passages of scripture where cherubim are described. The Lord spoke of them to Moses in the mount. Having commanded him to make an ark, or open chest, overlaid with gold, with a crown along its upper margin, He said “Thou shalt make a *mercy-seat* of pure gold. And thou shalt make *two cherubim* of beaten gold in the two ends of the mercy-seat.” In another place, this is explained thus — “Out of the mercy-seat made he the cherubim on the two ends thereof.” Then it is continued, “And the cherubim shall stretch forth *wings* on high, covering the mercy-seat with their wings, and their *faces* one to another, toward the mercy-seat shall the faces of the cherubim be. And thou shalt put the mercy-seat *above upon* the ark, and *in the ark thou shalt put the testimony* that I shall give thee” (Exo. 25:10-21).

It is probable, that the reason why Moses gave no description of them in Genesis was, because he intended to speak more particularly when he came to record their introduction into the most holy place of the tabernacle. In the text above recited, they are described as having wings and faces; and being made out of the same piece of gold as the mercy-seat, upon which they looked down, beholding, as it were, the blood sprinkled upon it; it is evident, they were symbols connected with the institution of atonement for sin through the shedding of blood. But they were still more significative. They were God’s throne in Israel. Hence, the psalmist saith, “The Lord reigneth; He *sitteth* between the cherubim.” This throne was erected upon mercy; and for this reason it was, that the covering of the ark containing the testimony, the manna (Exo. 16:33; Jn. 6:33), and the resurrected rod (Num. 17:8; Isa. 11:1), was styled the Mercy-seat, or throne, where the Lord covered the sins of the people. It was also the Oracle, or place from which God communed with Israel through Moses. “There,” said the Lord, “will I meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the mercy-seat, from between the two cherubim which are upon the Ark of Testimony, of all things which I will give thee in commandment unto the children of Israel.”

But, though Moses informs us of two cherubim with a plurality of faces and wings each, he does not tell us what kind of faces, or how many wings they had. This deficiency, however, seems to be supplied by Ezekiel. Those he saw had each of them *four faces* and *four wings*; a human body with feet like a calf’s, and the hands of a man under their wings. Of their faces, one was like a man’s; a second, like a lion’s; a third, like that of an ox; and a fourth, like an eagle’s. The things of his first chapter taken collectively, evidently represent *the Messiah upon his*

*throne, surrounded by his saints, and all energized and made glorious by the Spirit of God.* The rings of Ezekiel's wheels were full of eyes; but in the cherubim which John saw, the wheels were not introduced, but two more wings were added, and the eyes were transferred to the six wings (Rev. 4:8). In this place, the cherubim are styled "beasts," more properly *living creatures* (τα ζῶα); and are associated with "twenty-four elders." Now, by attending to what is affirmed of them in another place, we shall see who are represented by the four cherubim of Ezekiel with four faces each, and their wheels; and the four of John with one different face each, and twenty-four typical elders. It is written, that "they fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odors, which are (or represent) the prayers of the saints. And *they* sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed *us* to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; and hast made *us* unto our God kings and priests; and *WE shall reign on earth*" (Rev. 5:8-10). From this it is evident, that the cherubim, &c., represent *the aggregate of those redeemed from the nations, in their resurrection state.* The Lamb, the four cherubs, and the twenty-four elders, are a symbolical representation of what is expressed by the phrase, "them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called *saints*;" that is, those who have been constituted the righteousness of God in Christ *in a glorified state.* The cherubim are the *federal* symbol; and *the eyes*, representative of the *individuals* constituted in him who is signified by the Cherubim. The Lamb is introduced to represent the relationship between the holy eyes, or saints, and the Cherubic Faces; that is, between them and the Lord Jesus; while "*the twenty-four elders*" are indicative of their constitution as "the Israel of God." There are *twenty-four*, because the kingdom of God, being an Israelitish Commonwealth, is arranged with the *twelve sons of Jacob* as its gates (Rev. 21:12); and with *the twelve apostles of the Lamb* as its foundations (Rev. 21:14; Eph. 2:20); the former being the entrance into present life of the *fleshly* tribes, or *subjects*; and the latter, the foundations of the *adopted* tribes, or *HEIRS* of the kingdom; so that twenty-four is the representative constitutional number of the spiritual Israel of God; for without the natural the spiritual could not be; any more than there could be adopted Americans, if there were no American nation.

But, the Mosaic Cherubim were deficient of several of the characteristics which distinguish those of Ezekiel and John. They had simply the wings and the faces. His cherubim were not only of beaten gold continuous with the substance of the mercy-seat; but they were

embroidered into the Veil, made of blue, purple, and scarlet, and fine twined linen, which divided the holy and the holiest places of the tabernacle. Now, when “Jesus cried with a loud voice, he expired (ἐξεπνευσε); and *the Veil of the Temple was rent in twain from top to bottom*” (Mk. 15:37-38). Thus, we see the breaking of the body of Jesus identified with the rending of the Cherubic Veil; thereby indicating that the latter was representative of the Lord.

We have arrived then at this, that the Mosaic Cherubim were symbolical of “*God manifest in the flesh.*” We wish now to ascertain, upon what principles His incarnate manifestation was represented by the Cherubim? First, then, in the solution of this interesting problem, I remark, that the scriptures speak of God after the following manner. “God is *light*, and in Him is no darkness at all” (1Jn. 1:5); again, “God is a *Spirit*; and they that worship Him, must worship Him in spirit and in truth” (Jn. 4:24); and thirdly, “our God is a consuming *fire*” (Deu. 4:24). In these three texts, which are only a sample of many others, we perceive that God is represented by *light*, *spirit*, and *fire*; when, therefore, He is symbolized as manifest in *flesh*, it becomes necessary to select certain *signs* representative of light, spirit, and fire, derived from the *animal* kingdom. Now, the ancients selected the *lion*, the *ox*, and the *eagle*, for this purpose, probably from tradition of the signification of these animals, or the faces of them, in the original Cherubim. They are called God’s Faces because His omniscience, purity, and jealousy, are expressed in them. But the omniscient, jealous, and incorruptible God, was to be manifested in a particular kind of flesh. Hence, it was necessary to add a *fourth face* to show in what *nature* He would show Himself. For this reason, the *human* face was associated with the lion, the ox, and the eagle. These four faces united in one human shape, formed out of beaten gold; and two such, not separate and distinct symbols, but standing one on each end of the mercy-seat, and the same in continuity and substance with it; — taken as a whole, represented Jesus, the true blood-sprinkled mercy-seat, or propitiatory, “in whom dwelleth the fulness of the Godhead bodily” (Rom. 3:25; Col. 2:3, 9). All four faces were to look upon the mercy-seat, so as to behold the sprinkled blood of the yearly sacrifice. To accomplish this, two cherubs were necessary; so that the lion, and the ox, faces of the one; and the man, and the eagle, faces of the other, should all be “mercy-seat-ward.” It will be seen from this view of things, how important a place the Cherubim occupied in the worship of God connected with “*the representation of the truth.*” They were not objects of adoration; but symbols representing to the mind of an intelligent believer, the Seed of the woman as God

manifested in the likeness of sinful flesh. This I take it was the significancy of the Cherubim which the Lord God placed at the east of the garden; and which became the germ, as it were, of the shadowy observances of the patriarchal and Mosaic institutions; whose substance was of Christ.

### THE FLAMING SWORD.

“A Flaming Sword which turned every way.”

The things represented by the lion, ox, and eagle, faces, were visibly manifested in the sword of flame. This was light, spirit, and fire, flaming around the cherubim as the glory of God. It turned every way to keep the way of the tree of life. This is all Moses says about it; and were it not for other testimonies, we should be at a loss to understand its allegorical signification. The cherubim set up in the tabernacle and first temple, were enveloped in a cloud of thick darkness (2Chr. 5:14; 6:1). At night, the cloud which was visible without the former, appeared like a blaze of fire (Exo. 40:35-38), but in the day, it towered aloft as a pillar of cloud. Darkness and fire were frequent accompaniments of the divine presence; indeed, always so upon great occasions. The presence of the Lord upon Mount Sinai was a magnificent and terrible example; and when Jesus expired in blood, Judea was veiled in darkness, and God looked upon it. With the exception of the thunder, the earthquake, the tempest, and the flashing lightning, God’s communing with Moses, and after him with the High Priests, were conducted from between the cherubim, as upon Sinai — “the Lord descended upon it in fire; and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace; and God answered him by a voice” (Exo. 19:18); so that the thick darkness became luminous and indicated His presence. The illumination of the darkness without the voice would be sufficient to give assurance of acceptance. The Priest having witnessed this on the great day of atonement, when he came out to the people, looking for him with anxiety to know the result, would be enabled to report to them that the Lord had shined forth. This was the sign to them of a typical salvation. Hence, Asaph prays, “give ear, O Shepherd of Israel; Thou that dwellest between the cherubim *shine forth* — stir up Thy strength, and come and save us. Turn us again, O God, *cause Thy face to shine*; and we shall be saved” (Psa. 80:1-3).

But the flaming sword in Eden is more strikingly illustrated as to its probable appearance by Ezekiel’s description of the cherubic glory. He says, he beheld “a great cloud, and a *fire infolding itself*, and a brightness

was about it, and out of the brightness thereof as the color of amber out of the midst of the fire; whence issued forth the likeness of four living creatures,” or cherubim. “Their appearance was like burning coals of fire, and like the appearance of lamps: it went up and down among the living creatures: and the fire was bright, and out of *the fire went forth lightning*. And the living creatures ran and returned as the appearance of *a flash of lightning*.”

It was customary with the Lord to answer men by fire when any great principle, or new institution, was to be established. Thus, the covenant with Abraham was confirmed by fire (Gen. 15:17); there also came out a fire from before the Lord, and consumed the offering on Aaron’s induction as high priest (Lev. 9:24); when the plague was stayed at the intercession of David, the Lord answered him by fire from heaven upon the altar of burnt offering, and thus indicated the place He had chosen to place His name there (1Chr. 21:16, 18, 26; 22:1); and also at the dedication of the temple fire consumed the sacrifices in the same way (2Chr. 7:1). From these examples, I think it is a fair inference, that the flaming sword in Eden was applied to a similar purpose, namely, to flash forth its fire for the consumption of the sacrifices offered by the family of Adam before the Lord.

The fire described by Ezekiel represented the spirit of God in its cherubic relations; for as the fire flashed its lightning so they moved to and fro. It also represented the glory, or brightness, of the Messiah as he will appear upon his throne. “I saw,” saith he, “as the appearance of a man above upon the throne: as the color of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward, and from thence downward, as it were, the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about. As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance *of the likeness of the glory of the Lord*” (Eze. 1:4, 13-14, 26-28). The apocalyptic representation of the Lord’s glory when seated on the throne of David, is a repetition of Ezekiel’s, though under some modification, so as to adapt it to circumstances which had arisen out of the things concerning Jesus. “I beheld,” says John, “a throne was set in the heaven, and one sat on the throne. And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald. And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings, and voices: and there were *seven lamps of fire* burning before the throne, which are *the seven spirits of God*” (Rev. 4:2-5).

From these passages, it is evident, that *fire*, which is also *light*, is in symbolic representation significative of the *spirit* of God. If more proof

were necessary, the outpouring of the spirit on Pentecost and at the house of Cornelius, would be sufficient to settle the matter (Acts 2:2-4; 11:15). Now, when this appearance envelopes men and things, it is called *glory*, or *majesty*. Hence, referring to the transfiguration of Jesus on the Mount, the apostle says, “we were eye-witnesses of His *majesty*: for he received from God the Father *honor and glory*” (2Pet. 1:16). Such glory, or brightness, so beautifully represented by Ezekiel and John, will clothe the saints, as well as the Lord Jesus, when they shall appear in the kingdom of God: as it is written, “they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever” (Dan. 12:3). The apostle also speaks of the brightness of the sun, moon, and stars, as an illustration of the glory of the risen saints (1Cor. 15:41-42); and what is symbolically represented in Ezekiel and John of the glory of the Lord, is plainly affirmed by the prophet in these words: “the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of Hosts shall reign on Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before His ancients *gloriously*” (Isa. 24:23).

From the whole, then, I conclude, that the cherubim and flaming sword at the east of Eden’s garden were representative, *first*, of God manifest in the woman’s nature as “the word made flesh;” and, by being bruised in the heel, set forth as the blood sprinkled mercy seat, or propitiation for sin; and *secondly*, of God manifested in the spiritual nature, clothed with dazzling brightness, surpassing the sun and moon in splendor. The cherubim were the throne of the Lord in relation to the antediluvian world. There He communed with men. His presence was there, and the altar He had set up. When men went to sacrifice before Him, there they presented their offerings. If these were according to His appointment, He accepted the worshipper; and, probably, answered him by fire flashing forth from the cherubic glory, and consuming the sacrifice upon the altar. If the worshipper were faithless and disobedient, *the faces were hid* by thick darkness, and the offering remained unconsumed. This was the case with Cain. His countenance fell, and he expressed himself with anger. Then the Lord God “answered him with a voice,” and the conversation ensued which is recorded in the Mosaic narrative. Having then, ascertained the signification of the cherubim and flaming sword, I shall proceed now to speak of *the principles of religion*, or of

### “THE WAY OF THE TREE OF LIFE.”

“Strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life,  
and few there be that find it.”

Religion is not coeval with the formation of man; neither had it any existence during his novitiate. Though it was instituted in the paradise, it was not for his observance there; for while he continued the *sinless* tenant of the garden, he stood in no need of the *healing* consolations it affords. Until he ate of the forbidden fruit, there was no *breach* of friendship, no misunderstanding, no alienation, between him and the Lord God; there needed not, therefore, any means, or system of means, for the *reconciliation* of estranged parties. But, as soon as the good understanding was interrupted by disobedience to the Eden law sentence of condemnation to the dust was pronounced upon the offenders; and *means were instituted* to put them *at one again* with the Lord, that He might bring them back from the ground, no longer naked and ashamed of their condition; but clothed with glory and honor, incorruptibility and life, as a crown of righteousness that should never fade away. These *instituted means* made up the way of life, which Moses terms “*God’s way*” (Gen. 6:12). David styles it “*the path of life*” (Psa. 16:11); which the apostle in quoting renders “*the ways of life*” *οδοι ζωης* (Acts 2:28); that is, the way leading to life in which a man must walk now; and the way into the kingdom from the house of death.

In the beginning, God’s way, was styled “*the Way of the Tree of Life*,” which in the passage where it occurs, must be taken literally, and then allegorically. In its literal sense, it was the *path* leading to the Tree in the midst of the garden; but allegorically, it signified *the things to be believed and practised by those who desired to live for ever*. To believe and do, is to walk in “the Way which leadeth unto life;” because *immortality* will be a part of the recompense of reward for so doing. Until the crucifixion, the Way was marked out, first by the patriarchal arrangement of things; and secondly, by the Mosaic law; all of which pointed to the Shiloh. But, when Jesus appeared, he announced, saying, “*I am the Way*, the Truth, and the Life; no man cometh to the Father, but by me” (Jn. 14:6). He became *the Way*, by his sacrificial death, and resurrection. Whosoever would attain to life must believe the truth concerning Jesus, and the kingdom, which is the most holy place. Hence, it is written, “we have boldness to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, by *a New and Living Way*, which he hath consecrated for us, through *the Veil*, that is to say, *his flesh*” (Heb. 10:19-20). The old Way was but typical of the new; but both are purely matter of revelation. Nothing is left to conjecture. Man may corrupt the Way of the Lord; but he cannot improve it: and as surely as he attempts to adapt it to circumstances, he converts it into “the Way which leadeth to destruction,” which is both broad and easy to walk in, being in perfect harmony with the

lusts and thinking of the flesh.

The things of the Way of Life constitute RELIGION. As a word, it is derived from the Latin *religio*, from *religare*, which signifies, *to bind again*: hence, *religion* is the *act of binding again*, or, that which *heals a breach* previously existing between two parties. This traditional idea the Romans expressed by *religio*. They believed as the foundation of their mythology, that mankind and the gods were at enmity; but how it originated they had lost the knowledge of. Their impression was that they were angry, but not implacable; nevertheless, so estranged from men that there could be no direct communication with them. Mediatorial converse with the gods was an idea universally prevalent in the world. The pagans had derived it by tradition from the family of Noah; with whom was deposited the revealed principles of the Way of God instituted in the beginning. This idea of *mediate communication for the appeasement of divine wrath* was incorporated in all the domestic and temple worship which constituted their religion. They poured out abundantly the blood of victims; and, from the tradition of Abraham's sacrifice of Isaac in obedience to the divine mandate, the Carthaginians, who migrated from Palestine, probably concluded, that the most acceptable offering for sin was that of human life. Be this as it may, the principle that "without the shedding of blood there is no remission," which is an axiom of God's truth, took deep root among all the descendants of the sons of Noah. Their system was a corruption of God's Way. They were without faith, and erred, not knowing "His thoughts."

The word used by the Greeks for *religion* was *θρησκεία*, from *θρησκεω* *to worship*. This may be derived from *σκευος*, taken metonymically for a *minister*; and *θρεω* *to shout* or *make a clamour*; because, in that worship which results from the thinking of sinful flesh, the performers rend the air with their *shouts*; and if idolators, they "call upon the name of their gods" with frantic cries, "cutting themselves with knives and lancets till the blood gushes out upon them" (1Kgs. 18:28). The worship of God recognizes no such practices as these. When persons make their meeting-houses to echo with clamorous prayers, such as may be often heard among some who profess the religion of Christ — shouting, I say, like the priests of Baal, as though God were "talking, or pursuing, or on a journey, or peradventure sleeping, and needed to be awaked," — such persons evince that they are *σκευη οργης vessels of wrath*, who comprehend not the genius of the truth; and not *σκευη ελεους vessels of mercy*, whose thoughts are in harmony with the divine law. How different was the prayer of Elijah! From him ascended the "still small voice" of

fervent, but tranquil, supplication. He knew that God was neither deaf nor asleep; but a God everywhere present by the universality of His spirit. His words were few (Ecc. 5:1-2). He did not expect to be heard for his much speaking; knowing that God is not to be moved by “vain repetitions,” or volubility of speech; but by the love He has for His children, and for the glory of His name.

While men consider that there is a want of harmony between them and divine wisdom and power, and admit that they are deserving of divine wrath; they do not understand, that *as offenders they have no right to institute the means of reconciliation*. They act upon the principle, that God has left it to them to worship Him according to the dictates of their own reason. Hence, the world is full of modes of worship as diversified as the thoughts of sinful flesh. The notion that men may invent religious services; and that the divine displeasure can be appeased by human contrivances; are fallacies, which are characteristic of false religion wherever they are found. Men have no right to invent religions, or modes of worship. Even reason dictates this when the question is viewed as a breach between friends. When a misunderstanding occurs between such; the initiatory of a reconciliation of right appertains to the party offended; and he only has the privilege of dictating the terms of agreement. Hence, in the breach between God and man, it is God’s prerogative alone to prescribe; and all that men have liberty to do is to accept, or reject, the conditions of amity and peace. This view of the case precludes entirely the idea of appeasing the wrath of God by human ingenuity. God needs not to be appeased by man; and every system, therefore, which is predicated upon the notion that it is necessary, is not only unscriptural, but *essentially* false. He is already reconciled to the world, which He has always loved; although it acts the part, and therefore is, the enemy of God. “He so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life” (Jn. 3:16). The fact of a divine religion being instituted is proof of the love He bears the human race. He seeks to appease men by His goodness, which invites them to repentance (Rom. 2:4). His love is manifested in all that He has done for the world. He has sought to enlighten it, and to exalt it to a participation in the divine nature by the ameliorating influences of the truth. He has sent messengers to it with their lives in their hands, ready to lay them down in the divine work of beseeching mankind to be reconciled to God. Is it not strange that men should besiege heaven with vain and clamorous repetitions, “praying and beseeching” God to “come down and convert these soul-stricken penitents,” whom they are “bearing up in their arms

before a throne of grace;" representing them as quite ready and willing to be reconciled, if He would only grant His spirit, and so assure them that all was peace between them: — is it not extraordinary, I say, that this should be the order of things in the face of the revelation that "God was in Christ, *reconciling the world unto Himself*, not imputing their trespasses unto them;" "and so winking at the times of their past ignorance" (Acts 17:30). The case is exactly the reverse of the pulpit theory. This represents the world as reconciled, while God is unreconciled and hard to be persuaded. Hence, the world is full of religions, all of which have been invented, and continue to be observed, for the purpose of appeasing His wrath, and disposing Him to peace. He is represented by pulpit orators as in a rage; as ready to launch mankind into the flames of hell, and only prevented from hurling His thunderbolts at them, by Christ seizing Him by His arm, as it were, and pointing to his wounds! But this is purely mythological. God stands in no such attitude to the world, nor Christ to Him. The Lord Jesus is not contending with the Father upon any such principle. There is no antagonism between them. They agree in one; and what God conceives is committed to the Son to execute. The world is not reconciled to God; nor has it the least disposition for reconciliation upon any other principles than it has itself decreed. These principles are subversive of His supremacy in the universe; they are annihilative of His truth; they demoralize His character — therefore He will accept no homage predicated upon them. He has long since proclaimed the conditions of peace, which He is waiting to ratify in every case where they are accepted. This proclamation is styled, "*the Word of Reconciliation*," which, saith the apostle, "God hath committed unto us." Not, be it most distinctly understood, to me; nor, to the ecclesiastics of any sect, party, or denomination, extant. The Word of Reconciliation hath been committed to no man, or set of men, now living. It was committed to the apostles and their divinely inspired co-laborers, and to them only. So that they could say in the words of one of them, "We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us: he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error" (1Jn. 4:6). And they were perfectly justified in saying so. For Jesus said to them, "it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you" (Matt. 10:20); therefore he said in another place, "he that heareth you, hears me; and he that hears me, heareth Him that sent me."

The word of reconciliation, then, was committed to the apostles, whom God appointed as His ambassadors to the world. And, be it observed, that their ambassadorial character did not rest upon assumption, like that of

their pretended successors. God attested them, as He had done His Son before them. Their credentials were in the miracles which accompanied their word. They produced the signs of their apostleship; and multitudes acknowledged them, as Nicodemus did their Lord, saying, “we know thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him” (Jn. 3:2). They would not have been received as ambassadors of heaven if God had not attested them by His power; but being so attested, they were prepared, and did present themselves at Satan’s court, that is, before Caesar, to invite the world to be at peace with Him. The pulpit orators of this age are either greatly deceived, or, if their eyes be open, most egregiously impose upon the credulity of the public, in pretending to be Christ’s ambassadors to the world. Why, they are the world’s allies; the friends and supporters of the institutions of Satan’s kingdom; whose subjects pay them their wages on condition of *preaching such doctrine as suits them!* Talk of being the ministers and ambassadors of Jesus Christ, how perverted must their own minds be to imagine it; and how spoiled by “vain philosophy and deceit” the people, who can acquiesce in so unfounded a pretension! “Have they seen Jesus;” or what special message have they to the world from God, that men cannot read for themselves in the scriptures of truth? If they have any *new* light from Him, He will attest it as He has always done by a display of power. Men will then be justified in receiving them as plenipotentiaries of the Divine Majesty, provided always that what they speak be in strict accordance with what Paul preached; otherwise, not (Gal. 1:8). “God hath given to *us*,” say the apostles, “*the ministry* of reconciliation. Now then *we* are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech by us: we pray in Christ’s stead, be reconciled to God” (2Cor. 5:18-20). These are the men whom he appointed, who sought not to please the public, but to enlighten them; “for” saith one of them, “if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.”

The church was associated with the apostles in the ministry of reconciliation. By “the church,” I mean, not that multiform thing called “the church” by the world in these times; but that one, undivided body of disciples, collected together by the personal labors of the apostles and evangelists; and all through subsequent generations, who should believe and practise *the same truth*. To this “*one body*” (Eph. 4:4), energized by the “*one spirit*” (Eph. 4:4), and “perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment” (1Cor. 1:10; Acts 4:32), and styled “THE BRIDE,” — is committed the work of making known “the manifold wisdom of God” (Eph. 3:10), as contained in the word; and of inviting the world

to be reconciled to God (Rev. 22:17). No member of this body is exempt from the obligation of co-operating in this work. It is the duty and privilege of every one in his own sphere to endeavour to turn men to righteousness; for there is no distinction of "*clergy*" and "*laity*" in the family of God. In the days of the apostles things were very different to what they are now. There were many congregations, or churches, but they were all *one flock*, or "denomination;" and men endowed with spiritual gifts were their rulers. But even these were not distinguished from their brethren as "*clergy*," or priests; but as *ministers* or servants. Well knowing the presumption, pride, and arrogance of the flesh, the Spirit commanded them especially to feed the flock, and not to fleece it; to oversee it willingly and of a ready mind, but not for the sake of compensation; and to be examples to the flock, and not to lord it over *the heritages* (1Pet. 5:2-3). The word "*clergy*" as the title of an order, is assumed by men who have no right to it. It is a word which comes from the Greek *κληρος* *a lot* or *portion*; and is applied by the apostle in the text quoted to a single congregation of disciples; so that when he speaks of all the *congregations* of the flock, he styles them "*the heritages*," *των κληρων*. But, in after years, the ministers of the heritages, or clergies, disregarded the commandment, and set themselves up as lords of the heritages, which they fleeced, and oppressed for lucre's sake. They even made the clergies of God believe that they were nothing more than mere commoners; while they themselves, the usurpers of the believers' rights, were God's peculiar lot, or portion, as the tribe of Levi was among the Israelites. This usurpation came at length to be regarded as legitimate; and the distinction was then set up of "*clergy*" and "*laity*," from *οι λαοι* *the multitude*! But, the distinction belongs to the apostasy, and not to God's oppressed and scattered sheep. When "*clergy*" get in among them, it is "as grievous wolves, not sparing the flock, but speaking perverse things to draw away disciples after them" for their own worldly gain. (Acts 20:29-30). They have nothing to do with the word of reconciliation except to pervert it, and to bring it into disrepute.

The principles of the apostasy, and indeed of all false religion, are such as result from the thinking of the flesh when left to its own communings. This is illustrated in the case of Adam and Eve. They sought to cover their sin by a device of their own. "They sewed fig-leaves together, and made themselves aprons." Their shame was covered, indeed; but their consciences were not healed. But it was the best they could do in their ignorance. They were as yet unacquainted with the great principle that without the shedding of blood there could be no remission of sin. (Heb.

9:22). They were not aware of this necessity; for it had not been revealed: neither did they understand, that as offenders they would not be permitted to devise a covering for themselves. They had every thing to learn as the ground of reconciliation with God. They had no idea of *religion*; for hitherto they had needed none. It yet remained to be revealed as *the divinely appointed means of healing the breach which sin had made between God and men*.

Having then, been made subject to evil, and consigned to the bondage of a perishing state, the Lord God repudiated their fig-leaf invention, and “appointed coats of skins” for their covering. In this testimony there is much expressed in few words. To appoint coats of skins implies a command for the sacrifice of the animals whose skins were converted to this purpose. It also implies that Adam was the priest on the occasion, who presented himself before the Lord with the mediatorial blood. When the sacrifice was accepted, the offence was *provisionally* remitted; for the scripture saith, that it is not possible for the blood of animals to take away sins (Heb. 10:4). It was impossible, because sin was to be condemned in sinful flesh. This required the death of a man; for the animals had not sinned: so that, if the whole animal world, save man, had been made an offering for sin, sin would still have been uncondemned in his nature. Besides the necessity of a human sacrifice, God deemed it equally necessary, that the victim should be free from personal transgression; and that when he had suffered, he should rise from the dead so as to be “a living sacrifice.” If the death of a transgressor would have sufficed, then, Adam and Eve might have been put to death at once, and raised to life again. But this was not according to the divine wisdom. The great principle to be compassed was *the condemnation of sin in sinful flesh, innocent of actual transgression*. This principle necessitated the manifestation of one, who should be born of a woman, but not of the *will* of man. Such an one would be the Seed of the Woman, made of her substance, with Him for his Father who by His overshadowing spirit, should cause her to conceive. He would be Son of God by origination; and Son of Man by descent, or birth of sinful flesh. Now, it is not to be supposed that Adam and Eve did not understand this: God doubtless explained it to them; for they had none to teach them but Him; and without His instruction, they would not have known what they should believe. It was from them, that Abel derived the knowledge which was the foundation of his faith to which God testified in the acceptance of the firstling of his flock and the fat thereof. Adam and his wife had faith, or God would not have accepted the sacrifices with whose skins they were

clothed; for it was as true then as it is now, that “without faith it is impossible to please God.” Faith, then, in the Seed of the Woman, first as a sacrifice for sin, wounded to death by his enemies; and afterwards the destroyer of the sin-power: in connection with the sacrifice of animals as representative of the bruising of his heel — was the ground of their acceptance with the Lord God. It was the Way of Life. If they walked with God in this way, they would be as pleasing to Him as Enoch afterwards was, who was translated about 57 years after Adam’s death. It was the way which was corrupted by the antediluvians; and although the sacrifices have been interrupted, the faith and hope which gained celebrity and commendation to Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Moses, and a cloud of other witnesses, comprehended substantially the same things, but less in detail than in that faith which was preached by the apostles as the gospel of the kingdom and name of Christ, for the justification of all who should believe. The things believed by Abel, as compared with the faith preached on Pentecost, were as the acorn to the oak. The gospel of the kingdom in the name of Jesus was the revelation in full of the things communicated in the beginning; and afterwards more considerably amplified in the promises made to the fathers of the people Israel. When the saints are all gathered into the kingdom, they will not find themselves in an unexpected situation. They will all be there by virtue of believing the same things; though some, contemporary with the later history of the world, will have had the advantage of more abounding testimony. Their sins will have been covered upon the same principle — *by the raiment of righteousness derived from the sacrifice, by faith in whose blood they had been cleansed.*

There is no true religion without faith; nor any true faith without the belief of *the* truth. Now, although a scriptural faith is the scarcest thing among men, it is exceedingly simple, and by no means difficult to acquire, when it is sought for aright. Paul gives the best definition of faith extant. He says, “*faith is a confident anticipation (υποστασις) of things hoped for, a full persuasion (ελεγχος) of events (πραγματων) not seen*” (Heb. 11:1). This is the faith without which, he tells us afterwards, God is not, and cannot by any possibility be, pleased. It is a faith which lays hold of the past and the future. The person who possesses it, knows what is testified concerning Jesus by the apostles, and is fully persuaded of its truth; he also knows the exceeding great and precious promises which God has made concerning things to come, and he confidently anticipates the literal fulfilment of them. Laying hold of these things with a firm faith, he acquires a mode of thinking and a disposition which are estimable in the sight of God; and being like Abraham in these particulars, he is prepared

by induction into Christ, to become a son of the father of the faithful, and of the friend of God.

This faith comes by studying the scriptures; as it is written, “faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God” (Rom. 10:17). This word contains “the testimony of God.” When this testimony is understood, and allowed to make its own impression in “a good and honest heart,” faith establishes itself there. There is no more mystery in this, than how one man comes to believe another guilty of a crime when he is made acquainted with all the testimony in the case. The ability to believe lies in a sound understanding, a candid disposition, and knowledge of the testimony of God. Where there is ignorance of this there can be no faith. It is as impossible for a man ignorant of God’s word to have faith, as it is for a man to believe another is guilty of an alleged crime who knows nothing at all about the matter. But, one may say, there are multitudes who believe in Christ who are very ignorant of the scriptures. Yes, they believe in Christ as Turks believe in Mohammed. But this is not the faith defined by Paul. The mere belief that Jesus is the Son of God is not believing in him. To believe in him is to believe what God testifies concerning him. The faith of the “religious world” is like a stool with only one leg. It *professes* to believe in Jesus; but it is ignorant, and therefore faithless, of *the message* he was sent to deliver to Israel. His message had relation to “the things hoped for” — to the things of the kingdom which the God of heaven will set up upon the ruin of the kingdoms which now exist. Men are invited to believe in the Messenger of the Covenant, and in the message which unfolds the things of the covenant. To believe the one and reject the other is stultification. The “religious world” has placed itself in this predicament; and unless it believes the whole truth, which is not likely, it will be cut off as was Israel in the days of old.

“Love is the fulfilling of the law” (Rom. 13:10). “He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me;” “if any man love me, he will keep my words;” and “he that loveth me not, keepeth not my words” (Jn. 14:21, 23-24). In the face of these sayings of Jesus, what is the love of “professors” for God and His Son worth? It is like their faith, of no account whatever. God asks men for their hearts; but they give Him only their lips. They profess to love Him, but give their affections to the world. From the ecclesiastical throne, or pulpit, to the humblest “layman,” can they give a scriptural demonstration of obedience to the faith? They offer verbal sacrifices without end; at least *they* do who are compensated for their words; the “laity” are possessed of a legion of dumb spirits, and sit only as the listless hearers of the “eloquence” presented according to

their taste: — but where is obedience to the gospel of the kingdom in the name of Jesus? Who ever thinks of obeying this? And yet he comes to take vengeance on all who obey it not (2Thes. 1:8). I cannot too earnestly commend the words of Samuel to the attention of the reader in this place. “Hath the Lord,” saith he, “as great delight in burnt-offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry” (1Sam. 15:22-23). A great principle is set forth in these words. It is that which can alone place men in harmony with the religion of God. Without it a man may indeed know the truth; but he must believe *and do* if he would inherit the kingdom which has been preparing from the foundation of the world.

Religion is of two kinds; that, namely, which is invented by the thinking of sinful flesh; and that which is revealed of God. The former is superstition; and leads men to do a vast deal more than God requires of them; or less than He has appointed. In what is called “Christendom” most improperly (for instead of being Christ’s dominion as the word implies, it is the arena of his sufferings in the persons of his disciples, and in the suppression of his truth) these extremes of superstition in its plus and minus exhibitions, are illustrated in all their diversity from popery, which is superstition in excess, down to quakerism, which is superstition in its homeopathic proportion. The religion of God, on the contrary, is the *juste milieu*, occupying a commanding and dignified position between the two extremes. It does not require men to abase themselves in the dust, and to afflict their bodies for their sins; nor to plant themselves as so many statues of clay, with downcast or upturned visages in the silence of the sepulchre, under pretence of waiting for Him to move them to preach or pray. There is no fanaticism nor pietism in His religion. When in the exercise of it men are moved to action, they are acted upon by an intelligent and earnest conviction of the truth. This is the instrumentality by which He rouses men to religious exercise — *by the spirit, which is the truth* (1Jn. 5:6). When, therefore, they are really “moved by the spirit” they are moved by the truth, and do not talk nonsense. They speak according to “the law and the testimony;” and thus evince to all who understand the scriptures, that they have “*light within.*” Everything spoken not according to the word is nonsense; and the spirit never moves men to speak nonsense: nor doth the light of truth within ever teach men to undervalue the institutions of religion; or to live in neglect of them, under pretence of a refined spirituality, or superior sanctity. “By their fruits ye may know them.” This is an excellent rule by which to discern the spirits.

Men pray for the Holy Spirit; profess to preach under its guidance; and often in a very bad spirit, protest that they received it when converted. But the spirit dwells only with those who understand, believe, and obey the gospel of the kingdom; and who walk according to its precepts. No man, be he preacher, or “layman,” has the spirit, or anything else to do with it than as resisting it, who does not preach, and believe, the gospel Paul preached. The “religious world” is utterly destitute of the spirit which belongs to God’s religion; because it is ignorant of the gospel, and understands not “the voices of the prophets.” If, therefore, it be sincerely desirous of the spirit of God, let it renounce the traditions of “*the fathers*,” and “*mothers*” of the apostasy, from Origen to Joanna Southcote, Jemima Wilkinson, and Anne Lee; let it shake off the thrall of Rome, Oxford, Wittenburg, Geneva, and Nauvoo; all of which make of none effect the word of the living God: and let it “*search the scriptures*” according to the divine command, “proving all things and holding fast that which is good,” that it may believe the truth and obey it in the love of it. Christ will then dwell in its heart by faith (Eph. 3:17); it will be rooted and grounded in love, having attained to the obedience of faith, which is the sole criterion of love to God; and the well-intentioned, and conscientious, though unenlightened, members of its community, will have no longer ground of lamentation on account of “the decay of spirituality, and the prevalence of formality and worldliness in the churches.” All the Most High requires of men is just to believe what He has done, what He teaches, and what He promises; to obey the law of faith; to take care of the poor of His flock; and to keep themselves unspotted from the world. This is pure and undefiled religion (Tit. 2:11-14; Jas. 1:27). But, alas! where is it to be found?

Religion being the divine remedy for sin, it is evident that when the sin of the world is taken away, religion will be abolished. So long as sin exists in the earth, so long will there be separation between God and men; for it is sin, and that only, which interrupts man’s fellowship with God and His angels, as it obtained before the fall. When sin is eradicated from the world there will be no more death; for death and sin are boon-companions; as it is written, “the wages of sin is death.” The abolition of death presupposes the extinction of sin in the flesh; and consequently that the *animal nature* of man has been transformed (not evaporated, but changed) into the *spiritual nature* of the Elohim. Man will then be no longer subject to evil. His race will have passed through its 7000 years of probation; and all of its individuals, who have been the faithful subjects of God’s religion, will become the incorruptible and perpetual inhabitants of the earth,

## SUMMARY OF PRINCIPLES

emancipated from every curse; God will then dwell in men by His spirit as He now fills the Lord Jesus Christ. All distinction of church and world, saints and sinners, righteous and wicked, shall cease for ever; for there will be none of the Serpent's seed alive. They will have been utterly destroyed; for only "the meek shall inherit the earth, and delight themselves with abundance of peace" (Psa. 37:11). Religion begins in the third chapter of Genesis, and finds the record of its end in the two last chapters of the Revelation. Its abolition is expressed in these words: "Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them as their God. And He shall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and *there shall be* NO MORE DEATH, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. And He that sat upon the throne said, "*Behold, I make all things new. And there shall be* NO MORE CURSE" (Rev. 21:3-5; 22:3). Then will the victory be complete. *The Sin-power and all its works will be finally abolished; and an eternal jubilee gladden the hearts of men, in whom God will be all and in all* (1Cor. 15:28).

As it is highly important that the reader should have a distinct understanding of the religion of God, if he would profit by it; it may not be amiss, in order to facilitate its comprehension, to present the following

## SUMMARY OF PRINCIPLES.

1. Religion is that *system of means* by which the *breach* made by sin between God and man is repaired; and the wound inflicted upon the latter is healed.
2. Man's defilement was first a matter of conscience; and then corporeal. For this cause, his purification is first a cleansing of his understanding, sentiments, and affections; and afterwards, the perfecting of his body by spiritualizing it at the resurrection.
3. An *evil* conscience is made manifest by the truth, and is evinced by shame, and by "doubts and fears."
4. A *good* conscience is characterized by a full assurance of faith and hope, founded upon an understanding of the gospel of the kingdom in the name of Jesus, and an obedience to it. The obedience of faith gives the subject "the answer of a good conscience."
5. A *seared* conscience has no compunctions. It is that condition of thinking flesh which results from the absence of all divine knowledge, and habitual sin. It is incurable.

6. Religion is a system of *faith* and *practice*.
7. The *faith* of religion embraces what God has done, what He promises to do, and what He teaches in His word; all of which is presented for the elaboration of a godlike disposition, termed “the Divine Nature,” in the believer.
8. To be of any value religion must be entirely of divine appointment.
9. The *obedience* of religion is a conformity to “*the law of faith*,” resulting from the belief of “the things concerning the Kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ.” It is termed “*the obedience of faith*; for believers only can yield it.”
10. The *repentance* of religion is the *thinking contrary* to the flesh, and *in harmony with* the testimony of God; accompanied with an Abrahamic disposition as the consequence of believing it.
11. The *morality* of religion is the taking care of the widows and orphans of Christ’s flock, and “keeping one’s self unspotted from the world.” Collectively, it is the “fruits meet for repentance.”
12. Religion hath its “*elements*,” which are styled “*weak and beggarly*.” These are “days, and years, and months, and times;” “meat and drink;” sacrifices, ablutions, ordinances of divine service, holy places, veils, altars, censers, cherubim, mercy-seats, holy days, sabbaths, &c., “which were a shadow of things to come; *but* the substance is of Christ” (Col. 2:17).
13. The elementary doctrinal principles of religion are few and simple; and no other reason can be given for them than that *God wills them*. They may be thus stated:
  - a. No sinner can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him; that he should still live for ever, and not see corruption (Psa. 49:7, 9).
  - b. Sin cannot be covered, or remitted, without the shedding of blood.
  - c. The blood of animals cannot take away sin.
  - d. Sin must be condemned in sinful flesh innocent of transgression.
  - e. Sins must be covered by a garment derived from the purification-sacrifice made living by a resurrection.
14. To be naked is to be in an unpardoned state.
15. The proximate principles of religion are “repentance from dead works, faith towards God, doctrine of baptisms, and of the laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment” (Heb. 6:1- 2).

## Chapter Six — The Present World in Relation to That to Come

GOD THE BUILDER OF ALL THINGS. — NOTHING ACCIDENTAL, BUT ALL THINGS THE RESULT OF DIVINE PREMEDITATION. — WHATEVER EXISTS HE CREATED FOR HIS OWN PLEASURE AND GLORY. — THE PURPOSE OF GOD IN THE WORK OF CREATION AND PROVIDENCE, REVEALED IN THE SCRIPTURES. — THE PRESENT ORDER OF THINGS MERELY PROVISIONAL. — THE ECONOMY OF THE FULNESS OF APPOINTED TIMES THE TRUE "INTERMEDIATE STATE" OF A THOUSAND YEARS DURATION. — THE TOWER OF BABEL BUILDERS, PEACE-MEN, AND SOCIALISTS. — THE PRINCIPLE UPON WHICH MEN ATTAIN TO THE ANGELIC NATURE, AND DIGNITY, DEFINED. — GOD'S TWO-FOLD PURPOSE IN THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD STATED. — THE MEANS BY WHICH IT IS ACCOMPLISHING. — DISSERTATION ON THE ELOHIM.

**A**MONG the many and various titles of the Supreme Being in the scriptures of truth, is that of a Builder, or Architect; as it is written, "The BUILDER of all things is God." Pursuing this suggestion, I remark, that "a wise master builder" never begins to build without a *design*. He draughts this after a scale of so much to the foot. This is the extension, or *time*, so to speak, of the building, or edifice, to be erected. Having well considered the whole, he concludes, that it is the best possible plan that can be devised in harmony with the rules and principles of architecture. The plan then becomes his "purpose," his "foreordination," "predestination," or design. All subsequent arrangements are made to conform to this recorded purpose, because it is the very best his most deliberate wisdom and ingenuity could devise; and no extraneous suggestions, or considerations, will cause him to diverge in the smallest iota from his predetermination.

The next thing the Builder does is to collect together all the necessary materials, whether of brick, stone, lime, sand, wood, or aught else that may be needed. If a spectator desired to know what all these crude matters were heaped up together in one place for, the architect would reveal to him "*the mystery of His will which He had purposed in Himself*" (Eph. 1:9), by submitting the draught of his plan, in all its lines, circles, angles, &c.; and he would describe to him such an arrangement of the materials as would impress the spectator's mind with an image of the edifice, though it would fall infinitely short of the reality when perfected.

If we suppose the edifice, call it temple, or palace, to be now finished, the architect would next order the rubbish, or materials which were left as unfit to work into the building, and therefore worthless, such as broken bricks, splinters, shavings, sand, and so forth, to be cast out to be trodden under foot, to burn (Mal. 4:3; Matt. 5:13), &c. Thus the edifice is built out of the accumulated materials, according to the outline of the draught, or purpose of the Builder; and the work is done.

Now, as the scripture saith, the Great Builder of the heavens and the earth is God. “His hand hath laid the foundations of the earth, and His right hand hath spanned the heavens.” The Builder of all things either left the elements of the world to a random and accidental aggroupement, or, He “ordered them in all things.” Where is the man among “philosophers” who will stultify, or idiotize, himself by saying, that the Creator permitted chance to elaborate the terrestrial system? The thing is absurd. Chance is defined to be the *cause* of fortuitous, or accidental, events. What is that cause? The fool says in his heart it is not God. Why does he say so? Because he would make the cause of all things, a mere physical disposition in matter, destitute of all intellectual and moral attributes, in order that he may get rid of all responsibility to such a Being. He hates truth, righteousness, and holiness, and therefore he vainly strives to persuade himself that there is no God of a truthful, righteous, and holy, character. But no man of any pretensions to sound mind would affirm this. Nothing has been elaborated by chance. The scriptures declare that everything was measured, meted out, and weighed; and that the Spirit of the Lord executed His work without any to counsel or instruct Him. As it is written, “He has *measured* the waters in the hollow of His hand, and *meted out* heaven with a span, and comprehended the dust of the earth *in a measure*, and *weighed* the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance. Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being His counsellor, hath taught Him? With whom took He counsel, and who instructed Him, and taught Him in the path of judgment, and taught Him knowledge, and showed to Him the way of understanding?” (Isa. 40:12).

God, then, had in His own mind a pattern, or design, of all the work that was before Him, before He uttered a word, or His spirit began to move. This design, or archetype, which placed the beginning and the end of all things before Him in one panoramic view, was constructed in harmony with the principles — the eternal principles of His vast, unbounded, realm; which coincide with the immutable attributes of His character. The work He was about to execute was for His own pleasure; as, saith the scripture, “Thou hast created all things, and for Thy pleasure they are, and were created.” But, when the work is finished, which, for His own pleasure, God labors to elaborate, *what will it consist in?* This inquiry we make as the spectators of the wonders of creation, providence, and redemption. We behold the materials of these departments of Eternal Wisdom, and we ask to what are all things tending? What temple, or edifice, is the Divine Architect raising for His own pleasure and glory? If we turn our thoughts within us, there is no voice there which unfolds the

philosophy of His doings; if we soar into the heavens, or descend into the sea; if we search through the high places of the earth — we find no answer; for “who hath known the mind of the Lord, who hath been His counsellor, or who hath instructed Him?” If we would ascertain what God designs to elaborate out of the past, the present, and the future, we must be content to assume the attitude of listeners, that He may reveal to us from His own lips what He intends to evolve in the consummation of His plans.

God, then, has caused a book to be written for our information as to His design — His ultimate purpose in the works of creation, providence, and redemption, which are the three grand divisions of His labor; and which are all tending to the development of one great and glorious consummation. This book, so graciously bestowed, and so inimitably written, is vernacularly styled THE BIBLE (*η βιβλος*;) or, scripturally, THE WRITINGS (*αι γραφαι*,) and sometimes THE HOLY WRITINGS. These are divided into two parts, popularly styled the Old and New Testaments. The appeals made by Jesus and his apostles to the writings were to what is now termed the Old Testament; for there were no other writings acknowledged then. The New Testament was not written in the beginning of the apostolic era. Indeed it was not so much needed then; for the apostles taught orally the things, which afterwards they in part committed to writing. The breathings of the spirit, enunciated through the spiritual men of the churches, supplied the place, which the New Testament now occupies. The writings of the prophets, which are the root and foundation of the new Testament, and without the understanding of which the latter is unintelligible aright, are divided into “the law and the testimony;” or “the law, the prophets, and the psalms;” altogether they are styled THE WORD. This, with “the testimony for Jesus” left on record by the apostles, makes the “*word of the Lord*” to us, which lives and abides for ever. All writers and speakers must be unceremoniously tried by this; for, God hath said, that “if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.” It matters not who the sinner may be; pope, cardinal, archbishop, bishop, minister, or their admirers; or, even one of the saints of God, or an angel himself; nothing he may say, or write, must be received unless in strict conformity to this word; and of this the people must judge for themselves upon their own responsibility; and in the face of their eternal weal, or rejection from the kingdom of God. To this book, then, we appeal for light — for information concerning the things which shall be hereafter.

If we take up an ordinary book, how could we proceed to ascertain the end the author had in writing his book? We should read it through

carefully, and thus having made ourselves acquainted with its contents, we should be prepared to answer the question intelligently and accurately. Why do men not do so with the Bible? God is admitted by all sensible persons to be the author; Moses, the apostles, and the prophets, are but His amanuenses to whom He dictated what to write. If then the question be put, what end had God in view in the six days' work of the creation; in His subsequent providential arrangements in relation to men and nations; and in the propitiatory sacrifice of the Lamb of God: — we proceed in the same way with the Bible in which He tells His own story; and answer according to the light we may have acquired.

Now the book of God is peculiar in this — it narrates the past, the present, and the *future* all in one volume. We learn from the accuracy of its details in relation to the past and the present, to put unbounded confidence in its declaration concerning the future. In ascertaining, therefore, the ultimate design of eternal wisdom in the creation of all things, we turn to the end of the Bible to see what God hath said *shall be* as the consummation of what has gone before; for what He has said *shall be the permanent constitution of things, must be the end which He originally designed before ever the foundation of the earth was laid.*

Turn we then, to the last two chapters of the book of God. What do we learn from these? We learn from them, that there is to be a great physical and moral renovation of the earth. That every curse is to cease from off the globe; and that it is to be peopled with men who will be deathless, and free from all evil. That they will all then be the sons of God, a community of glorious, honorable, incorruptible, and living beings; who will constitute the abode of the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb, the glory of whose presence will evolve a brilliancy surpassing the splendor of the sun. *The globe a glorious dwelling place, and its inhabitants an immortal and glorious people, with the indwelling presence of the Eternal Himself,* is the consummation which God reveals as the answer to the question concerning His ultimate design. The following testimonies will prove it:

“The inheritance of the saints in light” (Col. 1:12); “an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven” (1Pet. 1:4). “I, John, saw a new heaven and a new earth, and *there was no more sea.* And I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself will be with them, their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither

shall there be any more pain; for the former things (or the 'heaven and earth' in which they existed) are passed away. And he that sat upon the throne said, 'behold I make all things new.' And he said unto me, 'write; for these words are true and faithful.' And he said unto me, 'It is done; I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of water of life freely. He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son (Rev. 21:1-7); and there shall be no more curse'" (Rev. 22:3).

Now, *the creating of all things new*, implies that the constitution of things which precedes the new creation was *an old system*, that had answered the end for which it was arranged in the first instance. This old system, styled by John, "the former heaven and earth," is manifestly the system of the world based upon the six days' creation; for "the former things," which had passed away in the vision were the sea, death, sorrow, sin, the curse, and all their correlates. This old creation, with its temporary mediatorial constitution, then, is but a grand system of means, elementary of a still grander and inconceivably more magnificent creation, which will be of an unchangeable and eternal constitution. The old Mosaic physical heavens and earth are to the new creation, as the accumulated materials of a building are to the edifice about to be built: and hold the same relation to the new heavens, as the natural system does to the spiritual. We repeat, then, that the creation of the six days, which we have termed Mosaic, because Moses records their generations, was not a finality; but simply the beginning, or ground-work of things, when God commenced the execution of His purpose which He had arranged; the *ultimatum* of which was, to elaborate BY TRUTH AND JUDGMENT, as His instrumentality, a world of intelligent beings, who should become the glorious and immortal population of the globe, under an immutable and eternal constitution of things.

Such is the superlative of the matter. The physical creation of the six days is positive; there was *an ulterior*, however, as well as *an ultimate* purpose in the work. The ulterior is the comparative; the ultimate, the transcendent excellency of the design. The Almighty Builder of all things intended not to translate the whole human race from a state of sin and death at once into a state of unmingled good and glory. He foresaw, that the living race would never be fit for this; but that they must be previously disciplined and prepared for the transition. Hence, He proposed to develop an INTERMEDIATE STATE *upon the earth*, and among the nations of mortal men contemporary with it; in which, good and evil would still be commingled, but differing from the preceding state (the present) in this,

that, though evil would continue to be, sin should not have dominion over the world, but be dethroned by righteousness. We have styled this state *intermediate*, because it is designed to occupy a *middle place between* the present times of the Gentiles, and the unchangeable constitution of the globe, when there will be “no more sea,” and all men will be immortal.

This ulterior, but not ultimate, constitution of things is alluded to in these words: “God *hath made known* unto us the Mystery of His Will, which He hath purposed in Himself according to His good pleasure: that in the dispensation of the fulness of the times appointed (*οικονομιαν του πληρωματος των καιρων*) He might gather together in one all things under (*εν*) Christ, both which are in the heavens, and the things upon the earth, under Him” (Eph. 1:9-10). This elliptical allusion to the revelation of God’s will, or purpose, is strikingly interpreted by the following passages from the word. “The Iron Kingdom (the Roman) shall be divided into ten kingdoms. And in their days shall the God of heaven set up A KINGDOM, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people; but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.” They shall become “like the chaff of the summer threshing-floors; and the tempest shall carry them away, that no place shall be found for them: and the stone (or power) that shall smite them shall become a great mountain, and fill the whole earth” (Dan. 2:41, 44, 35).

“There shall be given to the Son of Man dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, may serve him; his dominion is an EVERLASTING DOMINION which shall not pass away, and his kingdom shall not be destroyed and all dominions, or rulers, shall serve and obey him” (Dan. 7:14, 27).

“The Lord,” Jesus, “shall be king over all the earth; in that day shall there be one Lord, and His Name one” (Zech. 14:9).

“The Lord of Hosts,” Jesus, “shall reign on Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before his ancients gloriously” (Isa. 24:23). “I, Jesus, was born that I might be a King.”

*“The righteous dead shall live again,*

*A thousand years with Christ to reign” (Rev. 20:6).*

“The nations shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into scythes: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more” (Isa. 2:4).

From these testimonies, it is manifest to all minds, unspoiled by a “vain and deceitful philosophy,” that, in the Economy of the Future Age, all kingdoms, states, and empires; and all people, nations, and languages,

are to be gathered together into one dominion under Jesus Christ. These are the "things in the heavens," and the "things on the earth," which, grouped together into one imperial dominion, will constitute an economy of things that will be wonderful and glorious. We see, then, what God hath declared *shall be* — AN IMPERIO-REGAL HIERARCHY OF IMMORTALS, *which, UNDER ONE CHIEF, shall possess all power and authority over subject nations in the flesh.* By such a constitution of things as this upon the globe, for 1000 years, the human race will have furnished from the foundation of the world, a sufficient multitude of righteous men to people the earth when there shall be "no more sea." Till this economy begins, the previous 6000 years will have furnished scope sufficient to obtain an adequate number of kings and priests from Israel and the nations, for the kingdom of the Future Age.

After this exhibition, who will lack the ability to answer the question, — Why hath God made of one blood all nations of men to dwell on all the face of the earth; and determined the previously appointed times; and the bounds of their habitation? The answer is, He created a human pair and subjected them to the law of procreation, that they might so multiply as to refill the earth; He divided their posterity into nations by the confusion of tongues; determined the times of their self-dominion; and set limits to their territorial extension — that, in the fulness of time, the materials of a KINGDOM AND EMPIRE OF NATIONS might exist, which He would confer upon a king, and such other regal associates, as in His own good and sovereign pleasure He should think proper to appoint.

The segregation of mankind into nations, then, is not accidental, or the result of mere human policy. It is a divine appointment. Human wisdom was opposed to it in the beginning; and if socialists, peace-movement men, and such like, could carry out their schemes, they would commingle the nations into one indiscriminate "universal brotherhood," and abolish all times and bounds of habitation. The projectors of the city and tower of Babel announced in their programme, that the enterprize was intended to secure to the patrons of the scheme "*a Name;*" and to prevent them from being "scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth." They were opposed to nationalization; they preferred a *fraternal communism*, and proceeded to build a temple of social fraternity for all mankind. But God, and His purposes, were in none of their thoughts. They were concocting schemes utterly subversive of them; therefore He interfered, saying, "Behold, the *people is one*, and they have all one language; and this they *begin* to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Let us go down, and there confound their language,

that they may not understand one another's speech. So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city" (Gen. 11:4-8).

The development of this imperio-regal constitution of nations is the one grand idea of the divine writings. It is the subject matter of the gospel of the kingdom, and peace, of God. All other divine arrangements concentre in this as the great focal truth of human redemption, and terrestrial regeneration. The needle is not more true to the pole, nor planetary attraction to the sun's centre, than are the things of the prophets and apostles to this idea of an Israelitish kingdom and empire of nations. To lose sight of this is to remain in hopeless ignorance of the faith and hope, which God has graciously set before us in His word; and to lay ourselves open to every species of delusion that the carnal mind, so fertile of evil fruits, may enunciate in opposition to the "mystery of the divine will."

Enlightened, then, by the scriptures of truth we are enabled to reply, that the present system of the world is but the aggregate of the means, through which God purposes to accomplish *two grand developments* — the one *near*; and the other a *thousand years more remote*. The creation of the six days, and the peopling of the earth with nations of mortal men, is the mere preparation and collection together of the raw materials for a great, glorious, and magnificent display of wonders upon the earth. Hitherto, these materials have been shaped, or reduced from chaos into form, by the *modifying influence of truth and divine judgment*. But for these agencies "an universal brotherhood" of savages, such as we behold in the vast howling wildernesses of Africa and America, would have shared the globe with the nobler beasts of the forest; unmitigated socialism after this type would have effectually superseded all ecclesiastical and civil association; or, if this extreme had given place to another, the world would have groaned under the ferocious despotism of a "brother of the sun and moon," a Nero, or of a pope Alexander VI. But, truth, and the sword of God, have been thrown into the scale of human events. Multitudes have embraced that truth in whole or part; — vastly more, however, in part than as a saving whole. According to their apprehensions of it, they have resolved themselves into party groups. A minority, a great minority, so great as to be styled "*a few*," have seized upon it in letter and spirit. These contend against everything opposed to it without regard to fame, property, or life; they contend, however, not with the sword of the flesh, but with "the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God." Not so, however, they who embrace it in part, corrupt it by admixture with human tradition, or

reject it altogether. They fight for their opinions as their means enable them. They who corrupt, or reject it, endeavour to suppress it *vi et armis*, by force, not of argument, but by clamor, misrepresentation, and proscriptive laws; and where they can find scope, by imprisonment, war, and murder. But, there are others who understand the theory of the truth to a considerable extent, but have only that spirit of liberty and sense of justice in them, which the truth inspires; without that disposition to suffer patiently and unresistingly for it, which it inculcates. Men of this class take the sword for liberty and the rights of men; and contend against all who would destroy them with a courage, which strikes terror into their enemies. By such agency as this, by action and reaction, by agitating the truth revealed, and the warlike conflict it produces among the nations, things have been shaped into the civil, ecclesiastical, and social, constitution of things, which prevails upon the earth in the present age; and which, having waxed old, is ready to vanish away.

We come now to a very interesting, and indeed, immensely important inquiry, namely; "Upon what principle, or principles, did the God of heaven propose to carry out His purposes in relation to the developing of rulers for the kingdom and empire of nations; and for the peopling of the globe under its eternal and incorruptible constitution?" Was it upon a purely intellectual, or a purely moral, or a purely physical and mechanical, principle; or was it upon all these conjoined? For example, He peopled the present world by first creating a human pair, and then placing them under the natural, or physical laws; will He provide kings and priests for His kingdom, and afterwards people the globe in its perfect constitution, by natural generation and physical regeneration; or, upon some other principle revealed in His word? Will He bestow the honor, glory, and dignity of His kingdom and empire upon men, because they are men; or because they are descended by natural birth from righteous ancestors? Or, will men inhabit the globe for ever, because they are flesh, and the offspring of His creative power?

It will doubtless be admitted, that upon whatever principle God might determine to operate, it would certainly be such an one as would redound most to the glory of His wisdom, justice, and sovereign power. This being conceded, we would inquire, would it have been to the glory of God, if He had made man a mere machine? — Had He made *inexorable necessity* the law of his nature, which he must yield to as the tides to the moon, or the earth to the sun? No reasonable man would affirm this. The principle laid down in the scripture is, that MAN HONORS GOD IN BELIEVING HIS WORD AND OBEYING HIS LAWS. There is no other way in which men can honor their

Creator. This honor, however, consists not in a mechanical obedience; in mere action without intelligence and volition, such as matter yields to the natural laws; but in an enlightened, hearty, and voluntary obedience, while the individual possesses the power not to obey if he think best. There is no honor, or glory, to God as a moral being, in the falling of a stone towards the earth's centre. The stone obeys the law of gravitation *involuntarily*. The obedience of man would have been similar had God created and placed him under a physical law, which should have necessitated his movements, as gravitation doth the stone.

Does a man feel honored, or glorified, by the compulsory obedience of a slave? Certainly not; and for the simple reason, that it is involuntary, or forced. But, let a man by his excellencies command the willing service of free men — of men who can do their own will and pleasure; yet voluntarily obey him, and, if he required it, are prepared to sacrifice their lives, fortunes, and estates, and all for the love they bear him; would not such a man esteem himself honored, and glorified, in the highest degree by such signal conformity to his will? Unquestionably; and such is the honor and glory which God requires of men. Had He required a necessitated obedience, He would have secured His purpose effectually by at once filling the earth with a population of adults, so intellectually organized as to be incapable of a will adverse to His own — who should have obeyed Him as wheels do the piston rod and steam by which they are moved — the mere automata of a miraculous creation.

But, saith an objector, this principle of the *enlightened voluntary obedience of a free agent* is incompatible with benevolence; it would have prevented all the misery and suffering which have afflicted the world, if the globe had been filled at once with a sufficient number of inhabitants, who should all of them have been created perfect. If the character of the All-wise were constituted of one attribute only, this might have been the case. But God is the sovereign of the universe as well as kind and merciful; and all His intelligent creatures are bound to be in harmony with His name. He might have operated on the objector's principle had it pleased Him; but it did not; for He has pursued the directly opposite course. Instead of creating a human pair, He could, indeed, have filled the earth with immortals, and left them blessed for ever. But then they would have been without character, neither virtuous nor vicious; and, like themselves, their world would have been without a history. God is not merely an intellectual, He is also a moral, being. "The Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God;" yet "merciful and gracious, long suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth. Visiting the iniquity of the fathers

upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of *them that hate Me*; and showing mercy unto thousands of *them that love Me, and keep My commandments*.” Such is the name, or character, of God; hence as all His works must glorify Him, they must redound to His praise as a merciful and gracious, a just, holy, and truthful, being. The sun at noon-day, the moon walking in brightness, and the stars in their courses, illustrate His eternal power and superhumanity; but, it is only His relations with intellectual and morally constituted creatures — the image and likeness of Himself — that can illustrate His moral glory, and redound to the honor of His name.

Seeing that God hath rejected the principle of *stern necessity and immediate physical perfection*, there remained but one other, according to which He could officer His kingdom and empire; and at length fill the globe with an order of beings “equal to the angels.” Upon this principle He has worked from the foundation of the world to this day. He made man a reasonable creature, and capable of being acted on by motive, either for weal or woe. He placed him under a law, which required *belief of God’s word and obedience*. He could obey, or disobey, as he pleased; he was “free to stand and free to fall.” He disbelieved God’s word; he believed a lie, and sinned. Here was voluntary disobedience; hence, the opposite to this is made the principle of life, namely, belief of *whatsoever* God saith, and voluntary obedience to His law. This is the principle to which the world is reprobate; and to a conformity with which all men are invited, and urged by the motives presented in the scriptures; even all who would inherit the kingdom of God, and afterwards inhabit the earth for ever, on equal footing with the angels of the universe.

The following testimonies will elucidate the principle of the divine economy — “I will give *unto him that is athirst* of the fountain of the water of life freely; and *he that overcometh* shall inherit all things;” — “blessed are they that *do His commandments* that they *may have right* to the Tree of Life, and that they may enter through the gates into the city;” — “to him that overcometh will I give to eat of the Tree of Life which is in the midst of the Paradise of God;” — “he shall not be hurt by the second death;” — “to him that overcometh and *keepeth My works to the end*, I will give POWER OVER ALL NATIONS; and he shall RULE *them* with a rod of iron;” — “if thou doest well thou shalt be accepted;” — “these things are written that ye may believe, and that *believing* ye may have LIFE *through his name*,” — “as many as received Jesus, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, *to them that believe on His name*, which are born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but which

are born of God;" — "except a man be born of water and the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God;" — "he that believes the gospel and is baptized shall be saved;" — "God will render to every man *according to his deeds*; to them, who *by patient continuance in well doing* SEEK FOR glory, honor, and immortality — ETERNAL LIFE" — but of testimonies there is no end. The law of the Lord is perfect, and *without a single exception*. There are no "perhapses," or "maybes;" it is not "yea and nay, but amen in Christ Jesus." — The only way to the kingdom of God, and to a participation in the eternal constitution of the world, is in the path of a faithful obedience to the law of God.

Now from these testimonies it is plain, that to attain the rank of sons of God in the eternal world — where, indeed, all are sons without exception — human beings, without respect to age, sex, or condition, must *believe and obey the truth*; for "without faith it is impossible to please God." This rule provides for no exceptions; but declares the principle without qualification. If faith then, be required, it is manifest, that God designed to move men *by motive*, not by necessity — but *by intellectual and moral considerations*.

Now, the carrying out of this principle necessarily involves great loss of human, or animal, life; for if virtue be the subject of reward, vice must also be of punishment. Because, if vice be unrestrained, it would gain the ascendancy; eradicate virtue from among men as before the flood; and defeat the principle, upon which it is proposed to effectuate the work, and thus destroy the original design.

The mere fact of dust, by the power of God expressed in creation and the physical laws, assuming the form of men, does not therefore, entitle them to the glory of the Future Ages; or expose them to the alternative of damnation in eternal death. These are doctrines predicated upon a *moral*, not a physical constitution of things. The destiny of the animal world, and that of men, is physically the same; they are all under God's physical laws, and consequently have "no pre-eminence" the one over the other. Man differs from other animals, as these differ from one another; and if his *race* attain to the angelic nature, which God designs it shall, it will not be because it is human, but because it is *voluntarily obedient to His laws*.

The peopling of the Future World upon this principle, we have proved from the word. It is a principle which annihilates all human sophisms and traditions about "the salvation of all mankind;" the "predestination of some to salvation, and of others to damnation by a stern, inexorable, necessity;" "physical regeneration before death;" "the disembodied existence of immortal souls in heaven or hell for ages before the

resurrection;" the "damnation and salvation of infants, idiots, and pagans;" "purification by death and resurrection without previous remission" — and much more unscriptural, irrational, and absurd jargon of the schools, and systems of the age.

Universalism, a wide spreading upas in the world, which teaches that all human beings, of whatever age and character, shall dwell with God eternally, is based upon a mistaken notion of God's purpose in the formation of the animal world. It is assumed by that shallow system of speculative theology, that His intention was "the greatest possible good to the whole creation." This certainly was not His design, for the principle I have demonstrated is utterly subversive of it. The *voluntary obedience of free men* implies the possibility, as well as the probability, of their *voluntary disobedience* predicated upon the known capriciousness of human nature. Now, as the very existence of God upon His throne, depends upon the suppression, and therefore punishment, of sin (which is sorrow and pain so long as life lasts) the greatest possible good to *all* men, in the universal sense of the word, was no part of His design, being incompatible with the principle and end in view. "The greatest possible good of the whole creation," then, being no part of His purpose, it is a mere conceit the idea, that God wills the immortalization and glorification of every member of the human family. He has purposed no such thing. His design requires only *the separation from the nations of a sufficient number of men and women to occupy the globe when constituted on an eternal basis, without sea, be that many or few.* "What a paltry, contemptible, few," exclaims one, "compared with the immense mass of human flesh and blood, which will have existed on the earth for 7000 years!" Granted; but what is needed more than a sufficient population for the renovated earth? If this immense mass of corruption and sin, living and dead, had listened to the voice of reason; if it would have believed God and obeyed Him; an adequate provision would have been made for them; but they would not, and the consequences inevitably follow. The principle is an eternal one. It is persistent as God Himself; a principle without an exception, and as uncompromising as the truth. The case of the thief on the cross only establishes the rule. He believed in the kingdom of God, and acknowledged Jesus while in his lowest estate, as "King of the Jews," and therefore future monarch of the nation. He was *by constitution* one of "the children of the kingdom" (Matt. 8:12), though he had proved himself a very disreputable citizen. It was only necessary in his case, that his faith, and change of mind and disposition, should be counted to him for repentance and remission of sins; for without this he could not enter the

kingdom of God. The Lord Jesus, who then alone upon the earth had power to forgive sins, granted his petition; and so constituted him an heir of the righteousness which is by faith in the gospel of the kingdom. The case of the thief was unique, and one to which there has been none like before or since.

It is proved, then, that the revealed mystery of God's will, which He has purposed in His own mind, is first *to found a kingdom and empire of nations, which He will bestow on the crucified and resurrected King of the Jews; and upon all those who believe the doctrine, or word, concerning it, and become obedient to the faith:* and secondly, at the end of 7000 years from the foundation of the world, *to renovate the globe; and to people it with immortal men "equal to the angels," who shall all have attained to the eternal state, and to the possession of all its transcendent glories, on the principle of believing His "exceeding great and precious promises," and of lovingly and voluntarily obeying His laws.*

Behold, then, the conclusion of the matter. There are two systems, or worlds; the one, the animal and natural; the other, the spiritual and incorruptible; and between these a mixed state, being partly animal and partly spiritual, which may be termed *the transition state*. Out of the natural system, as the materials and scaffolding of the building, God purposes to elaborate "the ages of the ages" with all that shall pertain to them. Thus constituted, the globe will become a glorious province of the universe, and a new imperial abode of the Divine Majesty. It will then be a sealess (Rev. 21:1) and luminous sphere; and peopled with myriads of inhabitants of equal rank and station with the angels of God. The means by which from the beginning He determined to accomplish this magnificent work, were first, by His creative energy to lay the foundation; secondly, by constitutional arrangement, and angelic oversight, which men term "providence," to shape, and overrule all things, so as to work out the end proposed; thirdly, by the moral force of truth, argued and attested; fourthly, by judicial interference in human affairs; and lastly, by recreative energy in the renovation of the earth. When the gigantic work is perfected, the edifice will be complete; and the top stone imposed with joyous acclamations, saying, "Grace! grace unto it!"

## DISSERTATION ON THE ELOHIM.

The principles of universal grammar require in general, that a "*verb agree with its nominative in number and person;*" as, the spirit moves, the waters roar. Here, *the spirit* is of the singular number, and third person;

and so is the verb *moves*; hence they agree in number and person: “the waters” is of the third person plural, and so is *roar*; hence they also agree. But, in the first chapter of Genesis, this rule appears to be disregarded by the spirit, under whose guidance Moses wrote. In the first verse it reads, *berayshith bara Elohim ayth*, i.e. in the beginning Elohim created. In this sentence *bara* is the verb in the third person singular, and *Elohim* a noun in the third person plural; so that they do not agree according to the rule. For an agreement to ensue, either the noun should be *eloh*, or *el*, in the singular, or it should remain as it is in the plural, and the verb should be changed to *barau*; as, *barau ELOHIM (they)* created. But it does not stand thus; it reads literally (the) Elohim (He) created.

Speaking of Elohim, Dr. Wilson says, “that this noun, which is not unintentionally here joined with the singular verb *bara*, is, nevertheless, really plural, appears not merely from its termination *im*, but by its being frequently joined with adjectives, pronouns, and verbs in the plural. *Wyyomer Elohim nashah adam betzalmai-nu*, i.e. Elohim said, ‘Let us make man in *our* image.’ Mr. Parkhurst, in his lexicon under the word *alah*, cites many passages where Elohim is associated with other plurals. Upon close examination there will be found no good reason to question the conclusion, that Elohim is a noun plural, and signifies “*gods*,” and ought to be so rendered throughout this chapter.

But, why the plural Elohim, gods, should have been associated with a singular verb in this chapter, Hebraists have been much perplexed to answer satisfactorily to themselves, or others. Grammar failing, they have had recourse to dogmatism to explain the difficulty. Dr. Wilson truly remarks, that “Elohim is not unintentionally here joined with the singular verb;” though in my opinion Messrs. Wilson and Parkhurst have widely mistaken the intention. They imagine that it was intended to reveal a trinity of *persons* in one *essence*, or, as some express it, “society in God.” Dr. Wilson observes that “*Let us make man* is an expression of consultation, and marks a difference in man’s creation from that of other creatures in point of importance. ‘Let us make *man*’ regards the animal nature; ‘in our *image*,’ denotes his spiritual nature, which alone could resemble the Deity. ‘Let us make,’ etc. ‘in our image, after our likeness.’ Here is the plurality three times expressed, and that in the first person; a manifest agreement with, and proof of, the scriptural doctrine of a *plurality of the Deity*, to which, as God is one in essence, we give the name of *persons*.”

Elohim “a name,” says Parkhurst, “usually given in the Hebrew scriptures to the ever-blessed Trinity.” He wrote a pamphlet against Dr.

Priestly and Mr. Wakefield to prove a plurality of Elohim in Jehovah! If the reader understand who the Elohim are, this will appear an extraordinary instance of learned ignorance and folly. It is equal to undertaking to prove, that there are three princes in one king; or three angels in one archangel. In one thing, however, I agree with him entirely, namely, that a *plurality of agents* is denoted in the Mosaic history of the terrestrial creation. By faith we understand that the spirit, or word, operated in, by, and through them, in the formation of all things terrestrial; but that all these agents were in the divine essence, constituting “society in God,” is too great a camel for my power of deglutition.

A first principle with me in all reasonings upon this subject is, that “there is one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in all” His spiritual family. Another axiom is, that “He is the blessed and Only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; who ONLY hath immortality, dwelling in *the light which no man can approach unto*; WHOM NO MAN HATH SEEN, *nor can see*” (1Tim. 6:15; 1:17). And again, “God is Spirit” (Jn. 4:24); and He is “incorruptible” (Rom. 1:23). THE INCORRUPTIBLE SPIRIT DWELLING IN LIGHT is the scripture revelation of the undefinable essence of the self-existent Eternal One, who is from everlasting to everlasting, God. What His essence consists in, He has not revealed; He has made known to us His name, or character, which is enough for men to know; but to say, that, because He is a spirit, He is therefore “immaterial,” is to speak arrant nonsense; for immateriality is nothingness; a quality, if we may so speak, alien to the universe of God.

“No man,” says Jesus, “hath seen God *at any time*,” but Adam, Abraham, Jacob, and Moses, saw the Elohim and their Lord; therefore Elohim and the Everlasting Father are not the same.

Elohim is a name bestowed on *angels* and *orders of men*. It is written, “worship Him all Elohim” (Psa. 97:7). This is quoted by Paul in the first chapter of Hebrews, as a command of the Everlasting Father to the angels, that they should do homage to the Lord Jesus as His Son, when He shall introduce him into the world again at the opening of the Future Age. It is also written concerning him, “Thou hast made him a little lower than the Elohim.” Paul applies this to Jesus, saying, “we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels.” He continued inferior to them a little upwards of thirty years, from his birth of the flesh to his resurrection; when he was exalted far above them in rank and dignity, even to the “right hand of power,” which is enthroned in light, where dwells the Majesty in the heavens.

Those to whom the word of God came through Moses are styled

Elohim, as it is written, "I have said ye are Elohim; and all of you children of the Most High; but ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes" (Psa. 82:6; Jn. 10:34). "Thou shalt not revile the Elohim, nor curse the Ruler of thy people" (Exo. 22:28); that is, thou shalt not revile the magistrates, nor curse the high priest, or king (Acts 23:5).

Furthermore, it is a well established principle of the sacred writings, that what *the Everlasting Father* does by His agents, He is considered as doing by Himself. There is a maxim in law similar to this which runs somehow thus, *qui facit per alios facit per se*, what one doth by, or through, others, he does of himself. If this be borne in mind, many seeming incongruities will be harmonized. Thus, *the Lord* is said to have appeared to Abraham, as he sat in his tent door (Gen. 18:1); but when he first caught sight of the visitant, he did not see the Lord, but "three men," or Elohim, of whom one was the chief. Read the whole chapter and to v.29 of the next, and it will be seen, that the Everlasting God talks and acts by, or through, these Elohim, but chiefly through one of them, styled the Lord God.

In another place, God is said to appear to Jacob (Gen. 35:9), and in the second verse to say to him, "I am God Almighty;" and in the thirteenth, "God went up from him in the place where He talked with him." He was then at Bethel, where formerly "the Elohim were revealed unto him." On that occasion he dreamed that he saw a ladder reaching from earth to heaven, "the Lord standing above it, and the angels of God ascending and descending on it." These angels were the Elohim, or "ministering Spirits sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation" (Heb. 1:14). On one occasion they declared to Jacob the promises made to his father and grand-father in the name of the "Invisible God;" he wrestled with God in wrestling with one of them, &c. Hence, they speak in the first person as personators of the Invisible and Incorruptible Substance, or Spirit, who is the real author of all they say and do.

On a certain occasion, the Invisible God spoke to Job out of the whirlwind and said, "Where wast thou when I laid the foundation of the earth? Declare, if thou hast understanding. *Who* hath laid the measures thereof? declare if thou knowest. Or, who hath stretched the line upon it? Or, who laid the corner-stone thereof: when *the Morning Stars sang together, and all the Sons of God shouted for joy?*" Job could not answer these questions. He knew, doubtless, what the Elohim had done; but "touching the Almighty," by whose Spirit they operated, "we cannot," said Elihu, "find Him out." The Elohim were these Morning Stars and Sons of God. Jesus is styled "the Bright and the Morning Star," "the Day Star,"

and the Son of God. To say, therefore, that the Elohim are Morning Stars and Sons of God, is to speak in the language of scripture.

The relation of the Elohim to Him that dwelleth in the light in the work of creation and providence, may better appear by the following illustration. Experimental philosophers can form water, air, and earths; they can bring down lightning from the expanse; they can weigh, or rather, calculate the weight of, the sun, moon, and stars; they can speak by electricity; paint by sunlight; and outstrip the wind by fire. These are wonderful combinations of their genius. But what have these they did not receive? And from whom did they receive it? They subject certain substances to certain conditions. They do not originate a single principle. The elements, and the laws to which all simple and compound bodies are subject, are independent of the experimenters. They may say "Let water be formed;" and by passing the electric spark through the gaseous mixture, water will be formed; but it is the power of God that doth it, and not theirs. After a like manner, the Elohim gave the word; they brought the latent elements of the globe into play; they gave direction and application to power; and the Spirit of the Invisible God accomplished all they were commanded to arrange. The *Spirit* of the Incorruptible God through the Elohim *created* the heavens and the earth. *They* said, "Let there be light;" *they* saw that it was good; *He* made the expanse; *they* called it heaven: — He did it all through them; and they executed by His power what He enjoined. This power, or Spirit, being committed to them, it became "*the Spirit of the Elohim.*" Hence, in the beginning, the *Spirit of the Elohim* created; which being plainly indicated in the second verse of the first chapter of Genesis, needed not afterwards to be repeated; so that throughout the chapter, "Elohim" is written instead of "*the spirit of the Elohim,*" and is found in connection with a singular verb, not as its nominative, but as the governed word of the nominative singular, *ruach*, Spirit understood. This is the solution I offer of this grammatical enigma.

It is a part of the "strong delusion" which has supplanted the truth, to suppose that the Invisible God left the throne of the universe on a visit to this region of immensity, where, like a mechanic building a house, He worked in creating the earth and all things therein. After this fashion He is supposed to have made man; and when his mechanism was complete, to have applied His mouth to his nostrils, and "breathed into him a particle of His own divine essence, by which he became a living and immortal soul." Such a procedure on the part of the "Only Potentate," whose abode is in the light, and whose servants, the Elohim, are innumerable, would have been unfitting His dignity and underived exaltation. He has revealed

Himself to us as a Potentate, a King, a Lord, &c.; now, they who fill these stations, commit to others the service of executing their will and pleasure. And thus it is with the Invisible and Eternal Potentate. His kingdom ruleth over all. His angels, or Elohim, mighty in strength, do His commandments, hearkening unto the voice of His words. They are His hosts; His ministers, that do His pleasure (Psa. 103:19-21).

In the light of this revelation I understand the Mosaic record of the creation. It pleased the King Eternal nearly six thousand years ago, to add a new habitable province to His dominion; not by an original creation of a globe, but by the re-constitution of one already existing as one of the solar planets. He commanded His angels to go and execute the work according to the order detailed by Moses. They hearkened unto the voice of His word; and in six days finished all they were commanded to do. But, without His power they could have effected nothing; therefore, in the history all things are referred to Him. He willed; the Elohim executed by His Spirit.

All the lower animals are more or less observant; but the Serpent was the most so of all the Lord of the Elohim had made. It noted the objects around it, and among these observed the “*gods*,” or “Morning Stars and Sons of God,” to whom it told Eve she should be like, if she ate of the Tree of the Knowledge of good and evil. In the Hebrew, the word rendered “gods” is Elohim, the same as occurs throughout the first chapter. From what other source but the sight of its eyes, unless by divine inspiration, could the serpent have derived information about the “gods?” It spoke of what it had seen and heard. But the animals were still without a king; therefore, said the Chief of the Elohim, “let *us* make man in *our* image.” There was none like the Elohim of all the creatures they had made; therefore, they determined to make an animal after their *form*. They shaped him with head, limbs, and body, like their own; so that he stood before them the earthly image of the celestial Elohim. As much their image as Seth was the image of his father, Adam (Gen. 5:3).

We have not said that man’s *likeness* to the Elohim consisted in his being “very good;” but that the spirit of God formed him “very good” in the same sense that it formed all other animals so. They were without character; so was he: his goodness was physical, not moral; that of the Elohim was both.

Yet, in a certain sense, man was formed in the likeness of the Elohim. This likeness, we have already shown, but may repeat here, consisted in the man’s *ability to manifest mental phenomena like their’s; and in his susceptibility of an exaltation to their nature and rank, upon the same*

*principles as they had attained thereto.* By this similitude he was distinguished from all the other animals they had formed. He was constituted like to the Elohim, though of inferior nature. He could manifest intellect and disposition, even as they; and he could know evil as they had done.

Dr. Wilson observes, that the phrase “‘Let us make man’ is an expression of consultation, and marks a difference in man’s creation from that of other creatures, *in point of importance.*” To this I have no objection, and I believe that the “subtle serpent” overheard the consultation, and was, therefore, able to tell Eve, that there was a particular in which she should be *like* the Elohim, *ka-elohim*, by eating the fruit, in which she could not resemble them unless she did eat, viz., in “knowing good *and* EVIL.” In this point, man was unlike the Elohim when pronounced “very good.” Nor was this item of the temptation a falsehood; for the Lord of the Elohim said to his celestial companions, “Behold, the man *hath become AS one of us*, to know good and evil” (Gen. 3:22). In this, then, the man became still more like the Elohim; and in this likeness he hath continued ever since. But thanks to the Invisible God and Father of the saints, man is placed under a law of progression. His prototype has gone before. He was himself made “a little lower than the Elohim;” for he took not upon him *their nature*, but assumed that of the seed of Abraham. — His nature, however, is now like theirs, being *spiritual*, that is, INCORRUPTIBLE AND IMMORTAL. “We shall be like him,” says John; hence, also “equal to the angels,” as Jesus hath himself affirmed (Lk. 20:36).

The Arch-Elohim said that the man had become LIKE *one* of themselves in the matter of knowing good and evil. This also is an argument for his likeness to a plurality of persons; and it further shows, that the Elohim were once in a condition similar to man after he had transgressed. The Lord of the Elohim Himself declares, that they also had been *experimentally sensible* of evil, for this is the idea expressed by the Hebrew word YADA, *to know*, which the SEPTUAGINT translate by *εἶδew*, *eideo*. In short, it is credible that none of the Elohim of the only Potentate’s dominion were created immortal; but earthly, or animal, like Adam. The eternal King is the only being who is originally immortal in any sense, hence it is written, that He “*only* hath immortality.” The immortality of all other intelligences is derived from Him as a reward for the “obedience of faith.” Just men at the resurrection of the First Fruits will be equal to Elohim. Shall we say, that these “Morning Stars and Sons of God” did not attain to the spiritual nature by a progression similar to man; seeing that he “who was made so much better than they,” even Jesus,

the “Bright and the Morning Star,” was “made perfect through sufferings?” Have they had no trials to endure; no probation to pass through for the refining of their faith as gold is tried? It is credible rather, that they were once animal men of other spheres; that in a former state, they were “made subject to vanity not willingly;” that while in the flesh they believed and obeyed God with the self-sacrificing disposition afterwards evinced by Abraham; that their faith was counted to them for righteousness; that they succumbed to death as mortal men; that they rose from the dead, and so attained to incorruptibility and immortality as the Elohim of the Invisible God. Our mundane system is but the pattern of things in other worlds, which, may ere this have attained to that perfection which awaits the earth; and probably an illustration of what may even now obtain in other planets where the inhabitants have not yet progressed beyond the animal and probationary era of their history. *Our* angels, or Elohim, those I mean of the heavenly hosts, to whose superintendence terrestrial affairs are consigned, until the Lord Jesus shall assume the reins of government; not all the Elohim, but those of them related to us, “always behold the face of God,” and minister His will towards the sons of men. This is their glory — a part of their reward. He sent them to form and fill the earth with living souls. They executed their commission according to His purpose. Behold then the consummation. Mortal and corruptible beings like ourselves become Elohim, mighty in strength, and framers of new worlds, of which the planet we inhabit, even in its present state, is a grand and glorious specimen. “Behold,” says Jesus, once an infant at the breast, powerless in death, but now endued with all power, “*I make all things new.*” He will educe from the things which exist, a new and magnificent world, as a fit and appropriate habitation for his companions, redeemed by his blood from the sons of men. This is the destiny set before those who shall become “equal to the angels” by a resurrection to eternal life.

# ELPIS ISRAEL

## PART SECOND

### THE THINGS OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD, AND THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST.

#### Chapter 1 — The Gospel of the Kingdom in Relation to Israel and the Gentiles.

THE TRUTH INDICATED. — NONE BUT THE BELIEVERS OF THE TRUTH CAN INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD. — ABRAHAM “THE HEIR OF THE WORLD.” — TO INHERIT WITH HIM, MEN MUST BELIEVE WHAT HE BELIEVED; AND BECOME HIS CHILDREN BY ADOPTION THROUGH JESUS CHRIST. — THE GOSPEL AND THE THINGS OF THE KINGDOM ONE AND THE SAME. — IT WAS PREACHED TO ABRAHAM, ISRAEL, AND THE GENTILES, BY THE LORD GOD, BY MOSES, BY JESUS AND BY THE APOSTLES — GOSPEL THINGS SUSCEPTIBLE OF A THREEFOLD CLASSIFICATION. — THE KEYS OF THE KINGDOM. — INTRUSTED ONLY TO PETER. — THE MYSTERY OF THE KINGDOM. — THE FELLOWSHIP OF THE MYSTERY. — “APOSTOLIC SUCCESSION.” — QUALIFICATIONS OF AN APOSTLE OF CHRIST. — IMPORT OF THE PHRASE “THE END OF THE WORLD.” — “THE SIGN” OF ITS APPROACH. — THE GOSPEL PREACHED TO EVERY CREATURE BY THE APOSTLES. — MODERN MISSIONARYISM INADEQUATE TO THE END PROPOSED.

**I**N the former part of this work, I have shown that it has been the purpose of God from the foundation of the world, to set up a kingdom and empire of nations, which shall supersede all others previously existing upon the globe. We have now arrived at that part of our subject which relates to the development of this *imperial constitution of the world*, which when brought to the birth, will have occupied six days of a thousand years each in its formation. No topic can surpass this in interest and importance to every man that breathes the breath of life. God has made the belief of the things concerning it a condition of partaking in the glory, honor, and incorruptibility, which belong to it. Whatever ignorance may be overlooked, ignorance of the things pertaining to this kingdom alienates men from the life of God. This is equivalent to saying, that no man can attain to eternal life who does not believe the gospel; for the subject matter of the gospel is this very kingdom which it is the purpose of God to establish for the Son of Man and the saints.

It is of primary importance that we believe the truth, and not a substitute for it; for it is by the truth only we can be saved; “the truth as it is in Jesus,” neither more nor less, is that to which our attention is invited in the word. “The truth” is set forth in the law and the prophets; but we

must add to these, the apostolic testimony contained in the New Testament, if we would comprehend it "*as it is in Jesus.*" The kingdom is the subject matter of "the truth;" but "*as it is in Jesus,*" is the truth concerning him as the king and supreme pontiff of the dominion; and *the things concerning his name*, as taught in the doctrine of the apostles. As a whole "the truth" is defined as "*the things concerning the Kingdom of God and the Name of Jesus Christ*" (Acts 8:12). This phrase covers the entire ground upon which the "*one faith,*" and the "*one hope,*" of the gospel are based; so that if a man believe only the "*things of the kingdom,*" his faith is defective in the "*things of the name;*" or, if his belief be confined to the "*things of the name,*" it is deficient in the "*things of the kingdom.*" There can be no separation of them recognised in a "like precious faith" (2Pet. 1:1) to that of the apostles. They believed and taught all these things; God hath joined them together, and no man need expect His favour who separates them; or abolishes the necessity of believing the things He has revealed for faith.

There can be no doubt of the truth of these statements in view of Paul's emphatic declaration that "though we (apostles) or an angel from heaven preach any other gospel to you than that which we have preached unto you, *let him be accursed.* As we said before, so say I now again, if any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed" (Gal. 1:8). Here, then, he pronounces a curse upon even an angel if he should come and offer to us any other gospel than that which was preached by himself and the other apostles. It is our wisdom, therefore, to receive nothing which has not the sanction of their authority. Paul styles every thing else but what he preached, "another gospel," that is, "a perversion of the gospel of Christ;" and as we can only be saved by belief of the truth, such a gospel is both useless and injurious.

"*Gospel*" is a word which signifies *good news*; or glad tidings; and *the* gospel some particular good news. "Blessed," say the scriptures, "are they who know the *joyful sound,*" or the gospel; and the reason is, because it makes known the "blessedness" which is to come upon the nations, and will give everyone an interest in it who believes and accepts it. The gospel of God is the good news of blessedness promised in the scriptures of the prophets; and *summarily* expressed in the saying, "In thee, Abraham, shall all nations of the earth be blessed." The making of this promise to Abraham is termed by Paul, the preaching of the gospel to Abraham; for, says he, "the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith preached before the gospel to Abraham, saying, 'in thee shall all nations be blessed'" (Gal. 3:8). This, he styles "the blessing of

Abraham,” which is to come upon the nations through Jesus Christ. Abraham holds a conspicuous place in relation to the blessedness of the gospel. He is named by Paul six times in the third chapter of Galatians, which he concludes by saying, “if ye be Christ’s, then are ye *Abraham’s seed* and *heirs* according to the promise.” Hence, men are required to be Christ’s that they may be Abraham’s seed. But why is it so important to be of the seed of Abraham? For the very obvious reason, that as the promise was made to Abraham, it is only by being *constitutionally* “in him” that any son of Adam can obtain a participation in what belongs to Abraham.

This idea may be illustrated by reference to the law of inheritance among all civilized people. If a man be possessed of an estate, the members of his family alone have any right to it at his decease. Though all the world may be his friends, unless they are named in his will, they can have no part in the inheritance he may leave behind. And again, if he have no heir, his estate and property would escheat to the lord of whom he happened to hold his title; but, to avoid this, it would be quite competent for him to *adopt an heir* according to the law. The person so adopted would become his seed in every respect save that of natural birth. In the case before us, God hath promised an estate to Abraham; therefore he is styled “THE HEIR OF THE WORLD” (κοσμος), that is, of the glory, honor, and power, of the nations throughout the globe in their millennial blessedness — a gift worthy of Him that hath *promised* it. Now the promise of this to Abraham and his seed, is a promise to no one else. No stranger can lay claim to it. He must be Abraham’s seed, or he has no right to Abraham’s property. On this principle, no one who is not a lineal, or fleshly, descendant of Abraham can inherit the world with him when God fulfils the promise. This is the view taken of the matter by the Jews, who found their hope of participation in the world when it becomes Abraham’s and his seed’s, upon the acknowledged fact, that they are Abraham’s flesh and blood. This would be very well, if no other condition of inheritance were specified. But the word saith, that “the children of the flesh are not the children of God; but the children of the promise (*those who believe it*) are counted for the seed” (Rom. 9:8). If the children of the flesh had a right to share with Abraham when he obtains possession of the world which God has promised him, then all descended from Ishmael and Esau, his son and grandson, as well as from Isaac, would have equal rights. But God, who not only promises the estate, but specifies the conditions of heirship, has restricted the inheritance to those termed the “children of the promise as Isaac was” (Gal. 4:28). He has proclaimed the great truth that “the son of the bond-woman shall not be heir with the son of the free-woman” (Gal.

4:30). To be a son of the free-woman, a man, although a Jew, must *believe in the promise made to Abraham*; he must be of a like disposition with Abraham; he must be obedient like Abraham; he must have faith in Jesus as the seed of Abraham associated with him in the promise; he must believe in his name; he must be constitutionally inducted into Christ by immersion into the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit: — being the subject of these conditions he is included in the Family of God, to whose members it is said, “ye are all the children of God in Christ Jesus through the faith. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is no distinction of Jew or Gentile, bond or free, male or female, among you: for ye are all *one* in Christ Jesus. And *if* ye be Christ’s, *then* are ye Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise” (Gal. 3:26). These are the children of the promise, the children of God, the brethren and joint-heirs of Jesus Christ, the sons of the free woman, and Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob’s seed, who are alone entitled to possess the world with him.

Jesus came to preach the gospel. “The Spirit of the Lord,” saith he, “is upon me, because He hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; and to preach the acceptable year of the Lord” (Lk. 4:19). It is admitted, then, that Jesus fulfilled his mission; consequently, in his proclamation, he preached the *good news of the acceptable season*, or BLESSED ERA of the Lord. But, what was the great focal truth of this acceptable year? Let Jesus answer the question in his own words; “*I must preach the kingdom of God; for therefore am I sent*” (Lk. 4:43); and so much did he preach about this kingdom, that the people became impatient, and sought to take him by force and make him King. But he would not permit it; “and because they thought that the kingdom of God was immediately to appear, he spake a parable to them,” in which he gave them to understand, that he must first take a journey into a far country to be presented before the Ancient of Days to receive from Him the kingdom, and then to return; when he would bestow upon his servants power and authority over the cities of the world (Dan. 7:13-14; Lk. 19:11-17). According to this arrangement, Jesus rose from the dead and took his departure; when he ascended to the right hand of the Majesty in the heavens, where he is now. He has not yet received the kingdom, glory, and dominion, or he would have already returned. He is waiting for this, “sitting at the right hand of God *until* his foes are made his footstool” (Psa. 110:1). He will then appear in his kingdom and rule as King over all the earth.

The gospel, then, was preached to Abraham by the angel of the Lord; and it was preached by Jesus to his own nation, and to them only; for “he

was not sent, save to the lost sheep of the house of Israel” (Matt. 15:24). Paul also declares that it was preached to that generation of Israelites whose carcasses fell in the wilderness; but it did not profit them *because they did not believe it* (Heb. 4:2). Therefore, God swore in His wrath that they should not enter into the rest it proclaimed (Heb. 3:18-19). Before he suffered on the accursed tree, Jesus sent his apostles, and seventy others throughout the land, to “preach *the kingdom of God*.” In recording their obedience to his command, Luke says, “they went through the towns preaching *the gospel*” (Lk. 9:2, 6); so that it is clear, that to preach the kingdom is to preach the gospel; and to preach the gospel is to preach the kingdom of God.

This is a most important demonstration; for it enables us to determine when we hear the gospel. The gospel is not preached when the things of the kingdom are omitted. And this is one grand defect in modern preaching. Either there is nothing said about the kingdom; or a kingdom is preached which is a mere matter of speculation: a kingdom of heaven in principle, in the hearts of men, or somewhere beyond the skies! But, the gospel does not treat of such a kingdom as this; a mere fiction indoctrinated into men’s minds by “the cunning craftiness of those who lie in wait to deceive.” So inseparable is the idea of gospel from that of kingdom, that we find them, not only substituted for each other, but associated together as terms of explanation. Thus, “Jesus went throughout every city and village, preaching and showing *the glad tidings of the kingdom of God*” (Lk. 8:1; Mk. 1:14); and in the prophecy of Mount Olivet, it is written, “*THIS gospel of the kingdom* shall be preached in all the habitable (*εν ολη τη οικουμενη*, the *Roman empire*) for a testimony to all the nations; and then shall come the end” (Matt. 24:14). After he rose from the dead, he commanded the apostles, saying, “go preach *the gospel* to every creature: he that believes and is immersed shall be saved; and he that believes not shall be condemned;” and “lo, I am with you all the days (*πασας τας ημερας*) until the end of the world.” In view of these texts, can any one be so mystified as not to see, that salvation is predicated on believing the gospel of the kingdom, and being baptized into Jesus Christ? They were to preach “*this gospel of the kingdom*” in the name of Jesus; how did they execute the work? “They went forth, and preached everywhere, *the Lord working with them*, and confirming THE WORD with signs following” (Mk. 16:20). They began at Jerusalem, passed throughout Judea, then went to Samaria, and, lastly, to the end of the land (*εσχατου της γης*). They began on the day of Pentecost, and preached only to the Jews for several years; at the end of which, Peter and Paul

began to proclaim the kingdom to Gentiles also. The labors of the apostles were indefatigable. They filled the Roman empire with their doctrine; and made such an impression upon it, that tumults were excited; and they were charged with treason against the state, because they proclaimed another king than Caesar (Acts 17:7, 31) who should rule the world in righteousness as the sovereign Lord of all the earth. "They spake the word of God with boldness." "The multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul;" and great kindness was among them all. In about thirty years the gospel of the kingdom was proclaimed in all the world, to every creature under the heaven (Col. 1:6, 23). They finished their work, and fell asleep; the Lord having abundantly fulfilled his promise of co-operating with them to the end of the world.

Thus, the same gospel that was preached to Abraham, was preached also to Jews and Gentiles by the apostles after the ascension of Jesus to the right hand of power. There was, however, this difference; when it was preached to Abraham, and to the generation which perished in the Wilderness, *it was altogether a matter of promise*; but when preached by the apostles to the Roman nations *some things connected with the promise were fulfilled*; so that, the gospel of the kingdom as they preached it, was partly a matter of promise, partly a matter of history, and partly doctrinal. It was thus presented to mankind in a threefold point of view, which may be stated in this form: —

1. Promises to be fulfilled; or things concerning the kingdom of God:
2. Promises fulfilled already; or, things concerning Jesus:
3. The doctrinal import of the fulfilled promises; or, things concerning his Name.

A man might believe all the promises and their doctrinal import, but if he did not believe that Jesus of Nazareth was the subject of them, he would make a very good believing Jew under the law, but he would not be a Christian under grace. This is the great turning point in the faith of an enlightened Jew, and Christian. Is Jesus of Nazareth the personage described in the law and the prophets; has he right and title to the throne of David, and to the dominion of the world? The Jew says, "no; we look for another;" but the Christian replies, "he unquestionably is the person: we look for no other; but assuredly expect the re-appearance of 'this same Jesus' on earth, to restore the throne and kingdom of David; to occupy them as the King of the Jews; and to be the Melchizedec High Priest and Ruler of the nations." Hence, it is the foundation truth of the gospel of the kingdom, that Jesus of Nazareth is the Anointed King, and Son of the living God. He is the Rock, or Strength, of Israel; whose power will never

be restored till he sits upon the throne of their kingdom, and is acknowledged as King by the nation.

On the other hand, a man may believe that Jesus is the Son of God; that he was sent of God as a messenger to Israel; that there is remission of sins through the shedding of his blood; that he is the saviour; and that he rose from the dead: — if he believe these things, but be ignorant, and consequently faithless, of “the things of the kingdom,” he cannot obtain glory, honor, incorruptibility, and life in that kingdom. The condition of salvation is the *belief of the whole gospel and obedience to it*. It is not, “he that believes in Jesus Christ, and is immersed shall be saved;” but “he who shall believe THE GOSPEL, and is immersed” (Mk. 16:15-16). Simply to believe in Jesus is to believe no more than in “THE MESSENGER;” but, he was sent to preach the gospel to the poor; to show the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: this was his MESSAGE, the message of God to the Jew first, and afterwards to the Greek. Let it be remembered then, that salvation is predicated upon *belief in the MESSENGER and in the MESSAGE he brings from God*. The unhappy condition of the professing world at the present time is, that they have no faith in the message of God; but rather ridicule it, and heap insult upon those who contend for it. “I came to preach the kingdom of God,” says Jesus. “Oh! we believe that thou camest from God, because no man could do the miracles thou doest unless God were with him; but we do not believe a word in a kingdom in Judea under thy rule. We have no idea of thy coming to this cursed earth again to reign in Jerusalem; and to sit as a priest upon a throne there. This is nothing but the day dream of those who take thy words, and the sayings of the prophets, as if they were to be understood in the carnal, or literal sense. It would be derogatory to the interests of God to suppose, or desire such a consummation. No, no; we believe thou art at the right hand of the Majesty in the heavens, now reigning over mankind; that we are thy ministers and ambassadors on earth; and that in enriching us, the world is giving its substance and doing homage to thee; and that when we die we shall come to thee, and kingdoms rule beyond the skies! Our churches are thy kingdom here; and it is our deep and pious conviction, that the more they confide in us, and the less they trouble themselves about the millennium, the better it will be for them; and for the peace of the denominations to which they belong.” This is in effect the language of the religious leaders of the world; and of those who surrender their understandings to the traditions with which they make of none effect the “word of the kingdom of God.” But these traditions are sheer nonsense, and without the least foundation in the scriptures. They belong to a dark

and foolish generation; and find their origin in the speculations of men of corrupt minds and reprobate concerning the faith.

When the apostles preached on the day of Pentecost, they announced that God had raised up Jesus to sit upon the throne of David (Acts 2:30). In the porch of the temple they told the Jews, that God would send Jesus Christ to them at the time of the restitution (Acts 3:21). When Philip preached the word concerning Christ to the Samaritans, he announced “the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ” (Acts 8:12). In the convention of the apostles and elders, James invited their attention to Peter’s narrative and the prediction of Amos. He stated that the work to be done was to *take out of the nations a people for the name of God*, as it is written, “*AFTER THIS I will return, and raise up the dwelling place of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old: that they may possess the remnant of Edom, and all the Heathen which are called by My name. And I will bring again the captivity of My people Israel, and they shall build the waste cities, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards and drink the wine thereof; they shall also make gardens, and eat the fruit of them. And I will plant them upon their land, and they shall no more be pulled up out of their land which I have given them, saith the Lord*” (Acts 15:14-18; Amos 9:11). In Athens, Paul announced that God intended to rule the world in righteousness by Jesus Christ; and that He had raised him from the dead as an assurance of its verity (Acts 17:31). In the Ephesian synagogue he disputed for three months, persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God (Acts 19:8; 20:20-21, 25, 27). Paul stood at the bar of Agrippa, and was judged “for the hope of the promise made of God unto the fathers; unto which promise the twelve tribes of Israel, instantly serving God, day and night, hope to come” (Acts 26:6-7). Hence, he preached the hope of Israel’s twelve tribes, as set forth in Amos, and all the prophets; and directed their attention to Jesus as the personage whom God had raised up to accomplish their desire. Indeed, he told the Jews at Rome plainly, that he was a prisoner in chains on account of the hope of Israel; and in illustration of it, “he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, both out of the law of Moses and the prophets, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ” (Acts 28:20, 23, 31). According to the law and the testimony he spoke, diffusing the light of the glorious gospel of the blessed God, for two whole years in Rome, “the great city which reigns over the kings of the earth.”

To understand the relations of things, it must be known that the gospel

stands related to Abraham's descendants before the preaching of John the Baptist; to Israel from John to the day of Pentecost; from this epoch until the calling of the Gentiles; and then to the Gentiles at large. "The law and the prophets were until John, then the kingdom of God was proclaimed" to Israel by John, Jesus, the seventy, and the twelve. There was "*a mystery*," however, connected with the gospel which was not manifested in the proclamation of it before the day of Pentecost. The people were taught in parables, but the apostles were favored with an interpretation of them in private; for, said Jesus to them, "to you it is given to know the *mystery of the kingdom of God*, but to them it is not given" (Mk. 4:2; Matt. 13:11). Referring to this, Paul says, "my gospel and the preaching of Jesus Christ according to the revelation of *the mystery*, which was kept secret since the world began. But *now* is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets made known to all nations for the obedience of faith" (Rom. 16:25-26). "Pray for me," says he, "that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known *the mystery of the gospel*, for which I am an ambassador in bonds" (Eph. 6:19). Again, "by revelation God hath made known unto me, Paul, *the mystery*, which in other ages was not made known to the sons of men, *as it is now revealed* unto the holy apostles and prophets by the spirit; that the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of His promise in Christ by the gospel. To me was given to make all men see what is the *FELLOWSHIP of the mystery*, which from the beginning of the world (*απο των αιωνων* *from the beginning of the ages*) hath been hid in God, by whom (*τω*) all things were created for Jesus Christ. To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in the high places might be made known through the church the multifarious wisdom of God" (Eph. 3:3-10).

From these writings, we learn that the gospel of the kingdom of God is a phrase which embraces the whole subject; and that the mystery of the kingdom, and the fellowship of the mystery, are things pertaining to the gospel of the kingdom in a special sense, but unknown until revealed to the apostles. The mysteries of the kingdom were placed on record in the sacred writings; but their signification was hidden from the prophets themselves, until "THE KEYS" thereof were vouchsafed to the apostles. Hence, says Peter, "of the salvation of souls (*ψυχων*) the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the *grace* that should come *unto you*: searching into certain things, (*εις τινα*) also what point of time (*καιρον*) the spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand *the sufferings of Christ*, and the glory that should follow. Unto whom it was revealed, that *not unto themselves*, but unto us

they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into" (1Pet. 1:1-12).

The mystery of the kingdom, then, has been made known, and we find that it had relation to *the sufferings of the Christ; and repentance, remission of sins, and eternal life in his name, to the Jews first and afterwards to the Gentiles*. The prophets, who foretold these things, were not able to penetrate the mystery of them; and the angels themselves, who brought the word to them, desired to understand them. But this was not permitted; and it was preserved as *a secret* until after the sufferings of Christ, which were to be the foundation of the manifestation.

When the "point of time" drew nigh for "the finishing of the transgression, the making an end of sin-offerings, the making reconciliation for iniquity, and the bringing in of everlasting righteousness" (Dan. 9:24), Jesus, who had been anointed the Most Holy, the sealed prophet of the Father, and fully confirmed as Messiah the Prince, selected one man of the twelve (who had the least reason to exalt himself above his brethren as "the prince of the apostles,") as the depository of the keys of the Mysteries of the Kingdom of God. This highly honored individual was Simon Peter, son of Jonas, who denied his master with oaths and curses. But being converted, and restored to favor by his gracious Lord, he was prepared to be the unassuming "servant of the least;" and to strengthen his brethren in all the trials and afflictions they were called upon to endure for the truth's sake. "I will give unto thee, Simon Bar-jona," said the king, "the keys of the kingdom of God; and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven" (Matt. 16:19). Here was an appointment of Peter in a special sense to the particular function of binding and loosing men on earth. But, we would ask any reasonable man, unspoiled by human folly and absurdity, if a power be conferred on **A**, eighteen hundred years ago, is it therefore bestowed on **B**, living eighteen centuries after? The keys were promised to Peter, and not to successors of Peter, if it were possible for him to have them in such an office; which none but the most stupidly ignorant of the scriptures would venture to affirm. The custody of the keys by a successor of Peter, is the most farcical assumption that ever poor crazy mortals were guilty of. When we come to see what the keys of the Mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven are, we shall see at once, that the very use of them for the first time operates upon Peter's own possession of them, as the telling of a secret to all the world does upon his power over it afterwards by whom it was told. Had Peter, instead of using the keys,

hid them till his death-hour, and then imparted them to a single person, this individual might truly be said to have “succeeded to the keys.” But this he did not, dared not, do. He communicated them to such multitudes of Jews and Gentiles, that they became the common property of the world; and none but men, “earthly, sensual, and devilish” as the priests, “seducing spirits, speaking lies in hypocrisy,” whose trade it is to “make gain of godliness;” — none but such as these would have conceived of the possibility of a transfer of the keys of the Mysteries of the kingdom of heaven to a successor; especially to such a succession of impious impostors as the prophets of the Roman See.

A key is used in scripture as a symbol of the power of revealing, or interpreting, secret things; also for power in general. As a key is to a lock, so is power to things intellectual, moral, and political. The scriptures say of Messiah, “the key shall be upon his shoulder,” i.e. “the government shall be possessed by him.” And again, “I have,” says Jesus, “the key (κλεις) of the unseen (αδου) and of death;” which is to say, that Jesus hath the power to open the abode, or chamber, of the dead, and to restore them to life. In these instances, a key is the symbol of political, and physical, power; but it also represents scientific, or knowledge-imparting, power. Thus, under the law of Moses, it was divinely appointed that “the priest’s lips should keep knowledge, and Israel should seek the law at his mouth: for he was the messenger of the Lord of Hosts.” The priests, however, became so corrupt and ignorant, that Israel sought in vain for knowledge at their lips, and therefore perished for lack of it. The Lord charged this home upon them by the hand of Malachi. “Ye are,” says He, “departed out of the way, O ye priests; ye have caused many to stumble at the law; ye have corrupted the covenant of Levi, saith the Lord of Hosts. Therefore have I also made you contemptible and base before all the people, according as ye have not kept My ways, but have been partial in the law” (Mal. 2:8-9). This was precisely the state of things when “THE MESSENGER OF THE COVENANT” made his appearance in Judea. He denounced them for their corruptions. “Ye have made,” said he, “the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Hypocrites that ye are, ye draw nigh to God with your mouth, and honor Him with your lips, but your heart is far from Him. But in vain do ye worship Him, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.” Among these hypocrites were the lawyers, who, feeling the keenness of his reproaches, remonstrated against it. But, he turned upon them, and said, “Woe unto you, lawyers! For ye have taken away the KEY OF KNOWLEDGE: ye enter not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered” (Lk. 11:52).

This was the unhappy condition of the Jewish nation at the appearing of Jesus; as it is of all the nations at the present time against whom the kingdom is shut by clerical traditions. The Lord Jesus came to restore to Israel the key of knowledge. "They erred not knowing the scriptures;" but he was about to open them, so that in spite of the hypocrites, they might enter into the kingdom of God. O that men could be induced now to devote themselves to the study of the scriptures without regard to articles, creeds, confessions, and traditions! These things are mere rubbish; monuments of the presumption and folly of former generations indoctrinated with the wisdom from beneath. If a Berean spirit could be infused into them; if they could be persuaded to "search the scriptures daily" (Acts 17:11-12) for the truth as for hid treasure; they would soon leave their spiritual guides alone in all their glory of mysticism and patristic lore; and rejoice in the liberty of that truth which can alone make men "free indeed."

The gospel invites men to enter into the kingdom of God. The way of entering is made exceedingly plain in the bible. There is now *no hidden* mystery concerning it as there was before the sufferings of Christ were manifested. The mystery of the kingdom has been unlocked. The key of knowledge has been given; but unfortunately it has been stolen again by Peter's pretended successors and by every other ecclesiastic upon a smaller scale, who would discourage, or throw hindrances in the way of a free, unbiassed, and independent examination and avowal of bible truth in their churches; or, an unrestricted advocacy of it, though at variance with the institutes of dogmatic theology, in all the pulpits of the land. The leaders of the people dare not permit such a course to be pursued; for the bible is hostile to their systems, and sets forth things, which, if believed, would empty their rostrums, disperse their flocks, and close their doors; and elaborate such a social revolution, that truth and righteousness would triumph in the midst of the earth; and the people be enlightened in the knowledge which comes from God. Such a consummation, however, need never be hoped for, so long as the instruction and government of the nations are in the hands of the existing orders of rulers, lay and ecclesiastical; for "like priests like people," and *vice versa*; they are corrupt and altogether gone out of the way; and, therefore, are devoid of all power to resuscitate the things which remain, and which are ready to vanish away.

Before a man can enter into the kingdom of God, he must be unloosed from his sins in the present state; and liberated hereafter from the prison-house where the dead lie bound in chains of intense darkness. The unloosing from sins, Jesus committed to Peter; but the enlargement from

the chamber of death, he reserved to himself (Rev. 1:18; 20:1). *Knowledge* is the *key* to remission, or release from sins, and to an entrance into the kingdom of God. No one can enter this kingdom in his sins, and destitute of a character approved of God; and none could answer the question, “how can a man obtain the remission of sins; and what kind of a character would God henceforth account worthy?” — until the apostle Peter revealed the secret, communicated to him by the Spirit, on the day of Pentecost. If the reader peruse the second chapter of the Acts he will there learn how Peter used one of the keys of the kingdom given to him by its king. On that occasion, I say, he used but one of the keys. He revealed the mystery of the gospel of God’s kingdom to Jews only. They believed in the kingdom, glory, and dominion, promised to the Son of Man in Daniel and the prophets; they were well aware that the kingdom was to belong to their nation; that the king was to be David’s son, and to live for ever; and that the righteous were to take the kingdom with him: these things were the substance of the national hope; but they did not then know upon what conditions the obtaining of them was predicated. Hence, it was Peter’s duty to instruct them. He first recalled to their recollection certain notable things concerning Jesus. That the wonders he performed by the power of God evidently showed that God approved him; that *they* had been guilty of his death in clamoring for his crucifixion; but that all this was predetermined of God; that God had “loosed him from the pains of death” by raising him from the dead. He then proceeded to show by their prophets that the things which had thus happened to Jesus were verifications of certain predictions. He adduced the testimony of David, that the Christ was to be “*raised up to sit upon David’s throne,*” and consequently, must previously suffer death; and that after he was resurrected, he was to ascend to the right hand of God. He then concluded by saying, “let all the house of Israel know assuredly that God hath made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and King Anointed (*χριστον*).” For the truth of this statement he appealed to what they saw and heard; to the cloven tongues like fire sitting upon their heads, the “sound of a rushing mighty wind,” and, the many languages spoken by Galilean fishermen without previous study.

The result of the apostle’s reasoning was their conviction that Jesus was indeed the King of Israel, even the Shiloh that had been promised them for so many ages. They acknowledged him to be the “Son whose NAME should be called Wonderful, Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Founder of the Future Age, the Prince of Peace” (Isa. 9:6). This belief, however, also convinced them that, being this great personage, they had

committed an enormous crime; and had “killed the Prince of Life.” Their consciences smote them; “they had denied the Holy and Just One, and desired a murderer before him;” and had imprecated his blood upon themselves and their posterity. Of what use was their faith to them in this extremity? They believed *in the kingdom*, they believed *in Jesus*, they were penetrated with remorse, but still they were conscious only of guilt, and of judgment well-deserved. It was yet *a hidden mystery* to them what should be done for pardon of this great transgression. What was “*the righteousness of God*” which He required of them? Should they go to the high priest, and offer a whole burnt offering, and confess their sin? This would have been impracticable. Caiaphas would have offered sacrifice for them upon the altar upon no such confession as this; for in confessing themselves sinners for killing Jesus, they would have charged the high priest as a principal in the crime. To what, or to whom, were they to look for a solution of “the mystery?” Who could *unlock* it, and *open* to them the *door* of liberty, and *loose* them from their sins? Is not the reader prepared to answer, “the Holy Spirit alone could reveal to them of righteousness, because Jesus had gone to the Father?” (Jn. 16:7, 10). This is true; and the time had arrived to do it. But how, or through what channel, was the spirit to do this? Was it to be by words thundered from heaven; by a still small voice whispering in their ears; by a feeling that they were forgiven; by words of inspiration spoken by the tongues of angels; or by the mouth of man? After what has been said, the reader will be prepared to say, “the keys of knowledge, or, the power to reveal the secrets of the kingdom of heaven, were committed to Peter; therefore the new doctrine concerning righteousness, or justification to life, was to be revealed through him.” This is also true; but the “devout Jews” were ignorant of this arrangement; therefore, instead of addressing Peter alone, they inquired of all the apostles, saying, “*men and brethren, what shall we do?*” (Acts 2:37). Mark, reader, though the question was put to all, only one of them, and that one, Peter, replied to the inquiry. He was the spokesman of the twelve, by whose mouth God had chosen that Israel should hear the word of the gospel, and believe; or, as Paul writes, “the gospel of the circumcision was committed to Peter, in whom God wrought effectually for the purpose” (Gal. 2:8).

The answer given by Peter announced for the first time, what believers of the gospel of the kingdom and in the things concerning Jesus, *must do*, in order to become joint-heirs with him of the promise made to the fathers. To these *devout* Jews, who now believed what both the prophets and apostles had spoken, who were now humbled in disposition as little

children, swift to hear, and anxious to do, whatever the spirit should dictate; the holder of the keys to unlock the mystery of the gospel, said, “REPENT *and* BE BAPTIZED *every one of you* IN THE NAME *of Jesus Christ* FOR THE REMISSION OF SINS” (Acts 2:38).

Such an annunciation as this had never been made before. In this way “repentance and the remission of sins” were “preached *in the name of Jesus*.” This is God’s way of righteousness, and, besides this, there is no other way of salvation; “for there is *none other name* under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved” (Acts 4:12). God’s salvation is placed in the name of Jesus; and this name is accessible to mankind only upon the condition of believing “*the things concerning the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus*,” and being baptized by his name — “he that believes the gospel and is baptized shall be saved” — is the unrevoked fiat of the Son of God.

The words of the Spirit by the mouth of Peter went home to the hearts of these devout Jews. They that *gladly* received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added to the congregation about three thousand souls. And they continued stedfastly in the apostles’ doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers” (Acts 2:41-42). These disciples were “a kind of first-fruits of God’s creatures begotten of His own will *by the word of truth*” (James 1:18), which “lives and *abides for ever*.”

But, though the mystery of the gospel was thus made known in the name of Jesus, even Peter, to whom the keys of the mystery were given, did not yet understand “the FELLOWSHIP *of the mystery*.” The keys were not given to him when Jesus spoke the words; nor were both of them given to him on the day of Pentecost. The mystery was revealed to the Jews first; and several years elapsed before it was known, or supposed, that the Gentiles would be admitted to a joint-heirship with Jesus on an equality with the Jews. During this period of about seven years, the body of Christ consisted solely of believing Israelites, sons of Abraham by flesh and faith. At the end of this time, however, God determined to “visit the Gentiles, *to take out of them a people* for His name.” He graciously resolved to invite men of all the nations of the Roman territory to accept honor, glory, and immortality, in the kingdom and empire about to be established on the ruins of all others. Hitherto He had only invited His own people Israel to this high destiny; but now He was about to extend the gospel call to the nations also.

Before this, however, could be accomplished according to the principles laid down in God’s plan, it was necessary to prepare Peter for

the work. Although an apostle, he was still a Jew, and had all the prejudices of the Jew against the Gentile. He considered it "unlawful for him to keep company, or come unto one of another nation." The Jews had no more social dealings with the Gentiles than with the Samaritans. And if any had suggested the propriety of his going and preaching the Kingdom of God and the name of Jesus to Gentiles, he would have positively refused. If, however, he had been ever so willing, he could not have done it for various other reasons. In those days, no one could preach effectually unless he were sent; and, as he had not been sent of God, his mission would have been a failure. Then, he did not know whether God would accept the Gentiles on the same conditions as the Jews, if, indeed, He would admit them to a joint heirship at all. But, the law was a sufficient wall of separation to keep Jewish preachers and Gentiles apart until God's time should arrive to do it away, and to bring them together into "one body."

Peter, then, had to be prepared for the work. The narrative of his preparation is contained in the tenth chapter of Acts. A direct attack was made upon his prejudices. He became very hungry about 12 o'clock in the day. While waiting for something to eat on the housetop, an amazement came over him. In this state, he saw a great sheet full of all sorts of unclean creatures, fit and appropriate emblems of the moral condition of the Gentiles. At this crisis, the Spirit said, "Rise, Peter, kill and eat!" But Peter preferred hunger to defilement; and would not consent, until it was repeated for the third time, that the legal distinction between clean and unclean was done away: — "what God hath cleansed call not thou it common," or unclean.

The impression made on Peter by this vision is best expressed in his own words. "God hath showed me," says he, "that I should not call *any man* common, or unclean. Therefore came I to you, Gentiles, as soon as I was sent for." In this way the second key of the kingdom was imparted to him. Its use was to make known the Fellowship of the Mystery.

As soon as Peter's preparation was complete, even while he was debating within himself the meaning of the vision, three gentile messengers from Cornelius, a centurion of the Italian regiment, arrived from Caesarea, to request him to visit him. The Spirit told Peter to go with them, nothing doubting, for He had sent them.

Now, while God was preparing Peter's mind for a ready obedience, He had sent a messenger to tell Cornelius to send for Peter. It would be well for the reader to reflect on the character of Cornelius before the angel visited him. He was not a pagan Gentile, or a wicked sinner in danger of

hell-fire; but a proselyte of righteousness, or an outer-court worshipper. “He was a *just and devout* man, and *one that feared God* with all his house; gave much alms to the Jews, among whom he was of good report; and he prayed to God alway.” No better man, lay or clerical, can be produced from any modern sect than Cornelius. He was a God-fearing, “pious,” and generous-hearted man. He was not a perverse, hot-headed, ignorant disciple of some sect; but a man approved of heaven, whose prayers and alms ascended before God as a memorial of him. But why dwell so on the character of this excellent man? Because, a special messenger was sent from heaven to tell even this good man, this just and devout Gentile, to send for the apostle Peter, that *he* might come from Joppa, and tell him *what he ought to do*. But, as though this were not explicit enough, the angel stated that “Peter should come and tell him *words, whereby he and his house might be saved*.” Now it is worthy of especial note by the religionists of this self-complacent generation, that this just person was not in a saved state under the new order of things: that he had both to *hear words*, and to *do* something for his salvation which he had then as yet neither heard nor done. And let it be observed, furthermore, that *the angel* of God was not permitted to preach the gospel to Cornelius; or, in other words, to tell him what he ought to do; or, “the words by which he and his house might be saved.” He was only allowed to tell him to *send for Peter*. According to modern notions this was quite unnecessary; for, cries popular ignorance, it would have saved both time and trouble, if the angel had told Cornelius at once what it was necessary for so excellent a man to believe and do, instead of sending three men through the broiling sunshine to fetch Peter to Caesarea. O what a lesson is contained this interesting narrative for the “clergy,” “ministers,” and people of these times. How it convicts them of infidelity of the gospel, and sinfulness before God; or, if sincerity be granted to them, and, doubtless, there are among them many honest and well-intentioned persons, who “err, not knowing the scriptures;” — grant, then, that they sincerely love truth in the abstract, yet comparing their creeds and preaching, and practices, with the testimonies contained in the second, tenth, and eleventh of the Acts, to say nothing of others — how condemned are they as vain talkers, and deceived leaders of the blind. It is really painful to listen to the superficial dissertations of the textuaries, retailed to the people from the pulpits of the day. Theological speculations on isolated scraps of scripture are substituted for the words of Peter and the other apostles, by which alone even the “pious” can be saved. They talk of true religion, of primitive christianity, of the gospel, of churches of Christ, and of an evangelical

ministry; but where, among papist or protestant, church or dissent, are these things to be found, reflecting the precepts, precedents, and morality, of the “pure and undefiled religion” of the New Testament? This New Testament christianity is the grand desideratum of the protestant world; which, however, we despair of beholding even in theory until Messiah shall appear in his kingdom, and abolish all existing names, and denominations, which serve, indeed, as a kind of ecclesiastical police, but are perfectly useless as institutions capable of indoctrinating mankind with the things which they ought to believe and do, if they would become joint-heirs with Jesus of the kingdom, glory, and empire, of the Ancient of Days.

From the testimonies before us, then, we learn,

1. That “piety” and morality alone, will not save men;
2. That good and pious men must believe certain things and do certain others, for salvation;
3. That these things, indispensably necessary to salvation, are set forth in Peter’s words spoken to his contemporaries;
4. That Peter’s words are the keys to the mystery, and fellowship, of the gospel of the kingdom;
5. That there is no difference between Jews and Gentiles in relation to this mystery;
6. That God hath appointed men, and not angels, to preach the gospel;
7. That Peter was to be sent for, because to him alone the keys were given;
8. That, though piety and morality alone cannot save; neither can faith, unaccompanied by fruits meet for repentance, give a man inheritance in the kingdom of God.

Peter, having arrived at the house of Cornelius, announced to all present, “the things which God had commanded him to speak.” Having stated the great discovery made to him by the spirit, how that “God was no respecter of persons; but that in every nation he that fears Him (not, however with that fear ‘which is taught by the precepts of men’), and works righteousness (such as God requires) is accepted of Him:” — he directed their attention to “that WORD which God sent unto the children of Israel by Jesus Christ,” preaching peace. He told them that they were acquainted with that word; for it was published throughout all Judea, beginning from Galilee after John’s proclamation. As they knew it, he did not occupy time in repeating it in detail. The reader knows what the word was that God sent to Israel by Jesus Christ, for we have already spoken of it; but, lest it should have escaped him, we will reiterate it. “I was sent,”

says Jesus, “to preach the kingdom of God.” This was his message to Israel. Hence, he styles it in the parable of the sower, “the word of the kingdom.” This word was so notorious to all that sojourned in the land of Israel, that it was as familiar as any question could possibly be. It was known also to every one, how that Jesus was anointed, or christened with the Holy Spirit at his immersion in the Jordan by John; and how he went about doing good and healing the infirmities of the people; and none knew better than Roman centurions, that he was slain and hanged on a tree. These were matters of household notoriety and belief. A far more comprehensive faith than that of the moderns. But yet impotent to the justification of Cornelius and his house. More words were yet to be reported to them. Peter therefore affirmed that God had raised him from the dead; and shown him openly, not to the public in general, but to certain witnesses previously chosen for the purpose, even to the apostles, who could not possibly have been deceived, because they eat fish and bread with him, and drank with him, after he rose from the dead. These things they heard and believed. The next thing he declared to them was, that God had commanded them to preach to the people Israel, and to testify, that Jesus was he that is appointed of God to be the Judge (κριτης, King as well as Judge, since in the East the king is judge) of the living and the dead (2Tim. 4:1). Now, said Peter, and this was the fellowship of the mystery, “to him give all the prophets witness, that WHOSOEVER *believeth in him* SHALL RECEIVE REMISSION OF SINS THROUGH HIS NAME.”

This was new doctrine to Gentiles. They had heard of it before as preached to Jews; but they heard it now for the first time, that “*whosoever* believed,” whether Jew or Gentile, should receive remission of sins through his name. Peter had made a very straight-forward and simple statement of truth to them. This he called preaching “repentance and remission of sins in the name of Jesus.” There was no sermonizing, or text-weaving; no scratching of itching ears; every thing was delivered in a concise and dignified manner, which carried the impress of truth upon its very front. But, he not only opened the mystery of the gospel of the kingdom to these Gentiles, but he “preached the gospel to them with the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven;” for, “while he yet spake these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all them who heard the word.” When the six Jewish christians, who accompanied Peter, *saw* this, they were astonished, because that on the Gentiles was poured out the gift of the Holy Spirit, as on the apostles themselves on the day of Pentecost. They could make no mistake about this, for “they heard them speak with tongues and magnify God.”

Here, then was the word preached, and the word *confirmed* by the Lord working with Peter. No one that heard the account of these things could doubt for a moment, whether “God had purified their hearts by faith,” and accepted them. But still there was something wanting. Peter had told them of remission of sins through the name of Jesus to every one that believes in him; but he had not informed these believers, *how they could avail themselves of this omnipotent name*. How were they to be washed, sanctified, and justified, by this name? How were they to take it upon them? In what manner was it to be named upon them? The apostle says, that when the spirit fell upon them, he had only “began to speak.” If he had not been interrupted by this extraordinary effusion, he would doubtless have fully explained himself upon this point; for, he was not only commanded to preach the name of Jesus, but to command *believers* to be immersed “INTO THE NAME (εἰς τὸ ὄνομα) of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit” (Matt. 28:19).

Here then is a great matter. *The NAME OF JESUS is placed in the institution of immersion, based on an intelligent, childlike, belief of “the things of the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ.”* God has always placed His name in His institutions. Under the law He placed it in the Tabernacle, and afterwards in the Temple at Jerusalem; but, under grace, he has placed it in such a baptism as we have just defined, in conformity to which we can “worship Him in spirit and in truth,” without going to Jerusalem or Samaria. Cornelius and his household were in Caesarea, and in a private house. Peter did not require them to go to Jerusalem, or to a synagogue, in order to worship, or do homage, to God in spirit and in truth. They had believed the truth spoken by the spirit through Peter; and they awaited the command of the spirit as to the manner in which they might work the righteousness of God. Peter, feeling his way with caution, because of his six brethren of the circumcision who accompanied him, inquired, “Can any man forbid water, that these should not be immersed, who have received the Holy Spirit as well as we?” From this question we learn, that there were cases in those days in which the use of water was forbidden, or considered as improper. The apostles did not preach water to the people as the moderns do. They permitted no one to have access to the water unless they believed he was a proper subject. They were sometimes deceived, but that was not their fault; they did their best to discharge their duty faithfully. If a man did not believe the gospel of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they would not immerse him; for, it was commanded them that “he that believeth not should be condemned,” *i.e.* should not be unloosed from his sins in the

name of Jesus. The paidorhantists do well to refuse to be immersed; and the baptists do wrong to urge it upon them. For the sprinklers do not believe the gospel of the kingdom, and neither have they the spirit of the gospel; and therefore, they are not fit to be immersed. The institution of God's name ought not to be desecrated by the immersion of such misbelievers into its formula. Water should be forbidden them. It is not water, but faith, they need at present — that one, heart purifying, faith, such as Cornelius and his household possessed, and “without which it is impossible to please God.”

It cannot be said, that the paidorhantists (from *παυδες infants* and *ραντισται sprinklers*, that is, *infant-sprinklers*) make too little of water; one great offence against high heaven which they commit, is making infinitely too much of it. The efficacy the apostles put in the heart-purifying faith, and conscience-cleansing name of Jesus, they place in a few drops of “*holy*,” or common, water, and a physical regeneration of a hypothetic principle in the flesh! They require no faith, no repentance, no confession to qualify their subjects for the water and formula of the Name. They ask only a suckling of eight days, with godfathers and godmothers, whose characters are not even inquired into, to answer questions; which oftentimes they do not understand, and often have no intention to conform to the requirements of; or, dispensing with these godless gods, give them the infant with a proxy parental faith in the dogmas of a sect, and it will suffice. Paidorhantist “ministers,” with solemn mockery of the holy and august name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, will sprinkle the face of the mindless weekling, and impiously proclaim to the people, that such is the “one baptism” of the religion of Christ!!! Is it not wonderful, that God has witnessed this blasphemy for ages, and not rent the heavens with indignation upon them. Great, indeed, is the forbearance of the Most High; but, the time hath at length come, when His patience will have an end. How astounding is the presumption of such! “The people of the Lord” say they, “are we! Wisdom will die with us!” Yet they are *faithless* of the words of Peter, for they do them not; and have changed the ordinance of God, and made it contemptible. A rhanitized, but unbaptized, community, is the vast majority of the professing world; and therefore “without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope (no true one) and without God in the world.” They that honor God, He will honor; but they who seek honor one of another, and desecrate His name, are fattening their hearts for the day of slaughter; and are fit only for capture and destruction.

Cornelius and his household differ from these in toto. They all

believed the words of Peter, awaiting his commands. He had inquired, if there were any present who could, in the face of what they saw and heard, “forbid water that they should not be baptized.” He doubtless paused a reasonable time, that objections might be urged if any could possibly exist. But all Jewish prejudices were abolished by “the demonstration of the spirit,” and they held their peace. Things being brought to this crisis, it only remained for the Spirit of God to pronounce the word. Therefore, Peter opened his mouth, and “COMMANDED *them to be* BAPTISED IN THE NAME OF THE LORD.”

After this manner Peter used the keys of the kingdom of heaven given to him by the Lord Jesus Christ. When he had accomplished this work, *he no longer retained the power of the keys*. They were transferred to the multitude of the believing Jews and Gentiles. The spirit had revealed the mystery of the kingdom, and the fellowship of the mystery, by the mouth of Peter on Pentecost, and at Caesarea; so that the keys became the common property of all believers. The Lord, “who hath the key of David, hath opened and no man can shut” (Rev. 3:7-8); he hath set before the Gentiles “an open door, and no man can close it,” so long as the scriptures are in the hands of the people. The false prophet may dangle keys at his girdle, and affect the power of the Son of God; but so long as “THE LAW AND THE TESTIMONY” are accessible, “whosoever is athirst may come; and whosoever will, may take the water of life freely.” The scriptures contain the keys. Popes, priests, clergy, and ministers may suppress, torture and garble the truth, and throw hindrances in the way; but the man who discards their authority, and thinks for himself, may, by the enlightening efficacy of the living word, become “wise unto salvation by the faith which is in Jesus Christ.” Let the people then help themselves, if they would that God should aid them.

From what has been advanced it is manifest, that “the word of the kingdom” presents itself to us in the scriptures in a threefold relation;

1. As the gospel preached to Abraham, &c.;
2. As the same gospel preached in the name of Jesus on Pentecost, or the mystery of the gospel of the kingdom; and,
3. As the fellowship of the mystery of the gospel preached, first by Peter to circumcised Gentiles; and afterwards by Paul to the worshippers of idols.

These are not three gospels; but one and the same gospel, as before stated; originally all promise; then promise, history, and doctrine, preached to Jews only; and afterwards offered to the Gentiles upon the same terms as to the Jews. But, though I have set forth these things with

some minuteness, the reader will still feel that the treatise is incomplete so long as I have not set forth “the things concerning the kingdom of God,” to which such frequent reference has been made, as the grand theme of “the glorious gospel of the blessed God;” and, without the knowledge of which, a man’s faith is destitute of the “one hope of the calling;” which is the anchor of the soul both sure and stedfast within the veil in Christ Jesus; who is there “waiting to receive the kingdom and return.” This, then, will be the subject of future illustration, in the hope that we shall make it so plain that “he who runs may read.” I shall now proceed to say a few words upon

### APOSTOLIC SUCCESSION.

“Divines” contend that the mantle of the apostles fell upon the elders, or bishops, of the churches, who survived them; that these survivors were “*the successors of the apostles*,” and that when these died away, the apostolic mantle fell upon those who succeeded to their offices in the churches, being invested by the imposition of hands; and that thus from generation to generation until the present day, the succession has been perpetuated by the institution of ordination, or “holy orders;” so that the living orders of ecclesiastics, composed of pope, cardinals, bishops, priests, and ministers, are “successors of the apostles,” endued with like authority and power in the churches, and entitled to the same obedience and consideration. They found their claim to these high pretensions upon certain passages of scripture, written concerning the apostles and their co-laborers; which they apply to themselves; and argue that the grace of office has been transmitted from one to another by the imposition of “holy hands!” Thus, when an aspirant to apostolic succession presents himself before a bishop for ordination, the latter says to this effect, “Receive thou the Holy Ghost by the imposition of my hands for the office, or work, of a priest in the house of God; whosoever sins you remit are remitted, and whosoever sins you retain are retained.” This, says the thirty-sixth article of the national religion, “hath nothing, that of itself is superstitious or ungodly.” By virtue of this consecration and ordering, absolution or remission of sins, is pronounced by the priest standing up alone in the midst of the people, who kneel to receive it; and in the form, it is declared, that “Almighty God hath given power, and commandment, to His ministers, to declare and pronounce to His people, being penitent, the absolution and remission of their sins.” Thus, the national parsonocracy claim the apostolic attribute of remitting and retaining sins, of binding and

loosing, even as the papists; with this modification, however, that they remit sins in the gross, while the latter, do it both wholesale and retail. Thus, do the national and popish clergy speak blasphemy continually (Matt. 9:2-3, 6).

But, the state-clergies are not alone in their assumption of apostolicity; the dissenters are condemnable on the same account. They claim to be ambassadors of Jesus Christ; and they permit none to "administer ordinances" who are not ordained by the imposition of hands. The ordained do not undertake to forgive sins after the manner of the apostles; but they apply to themselves scriptures which relate only to the apostles, by which they constitute themselves their "successors."

But, the truth is, that neither state, nor nonconformist, clergies, are entitled to be regarded as "successors of the apostles." The nature of the office may be comprehended by the qualifications of the office-holder which were indispensable. They may be thus stated:

1. An apostle of Christ to the circumcision must be one who has accompanied with the Lord Jesus, from his baptism until his ascension; so as to be a witness to his resurrection (Acts 1:21-22, 8).
2. An apostle of Christ to the Gentiles must have seen Jesus (1Cor. 9:1); and have conversed with him as well as the former.
3. An apostle must be chosen, ordained, and sent, of the Lord (Jn. 15:16); and authorized by him to forgive and retain sins (Jn. 20:22-23).
4. An apostle must be able to work signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds, as signs of his apostleship (2Cor. 12:12; Gal. 2:8).
5. To be an apostle a man must have believed the pure gospel of the kingdom of God (Gal. 1:8), have been immersed (Lk. 7:29; Acts 22:16), and walk according to the truth of it (Gal. 2:14).

With these qualifications, the thirteen apostles (*αποστολοι*, *men sent with commands*) directed the affairs of the churches, which they had formed and established in the world. Their administration was in fact the administration of the Spirit through them; so that in their word was power (1Cor. 4:20-21) to the healing of disease, the infliction of it (1Cor. 5:4; Acts 13:11), and the destruction of life (Acts 5:9-10). They conferred spiritual gifts upon believers by the imposition of their hands (Acts 8:14-18); and gave commandments to the faithful as the vicegerents of the Lord (Matt. 28:20). Now, reason and common sense teach, that if men are real successors to apostolicity, they will be like Peter and Paul in all their qualifications and attributes; but reason also teaches, that after the ascension of Jesus, no man can be qualified for the apostleship unless the Lord appear to him, as in the case of Paul. But, the truth is, that this claim

of apostolic succession is as groundless, as the claim of the clergy of the apostasy to tithes, on the ground of their succession to the rights of, the Levitical priesthood. If their apostolicity be granted, it can only be as “false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. And no marvel,” continues Paul, “for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore, it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness: whose end shall be according to their works” (2Cor. 11:13).

It is a strong hold of these pretended apostles, that the Lord promised to be with them always to the end of the world. They contend (though, as learned men they must know better) that the phrase “the end of the world” indicates a period of time yet future; and, therefore, that Jesus had reference, not to the apostles only, but to their “successors” likewise. Hence, they argue that the command yet remains with them to be executed, which says, “Go ye therefore, into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.” But, to this I object, that the end of the world to which Jesus referred, arrived seventeen hundred years ago; secondly, that the work enjoined upon the persons in the text was fully accomplished by the apostles; thirdly, that the Lord is not with them who pretend to be their successors; fourthly, that the moderns cannot execute the command, because they are utterly ignorant of the gospel; and, therefore, cannot be the individuals referred to.

In the first place, the Lord Jesus did not use the phrase, “the end of the world,” in the vulgar English sense of it. He said to the eleven, “Behold, I am *with you, πασας τας ημερας, all the days, εως της συντελειας του αιωνος, until the end of the age.*” Here are *certain days* indicated, which were comprehended in the period to elapse from the time when Jesus made the promise, until the end of the age. These days are termed by Paul, “*these last days*” (Heb. 1:1-2); which he characterizes as those in which God spoke to the Israelites by a Son, as well as those in which he was writing to the Hebrews some thirty years after: “*these last days,*” says he. Now, these days taken collectively, he styles according to the English version, “the end of the world;” as it is written, “Now once *in the end of the world* hath Jesus appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself” (Heb. 9:26). The reader will easily perceive by the mark in the text, that the world spoken of was that to which Jesus stood related by death. That it was near its end when he was crucified by it; but if “*the world*” is to be taken in the vulgar english sense, Paul was wrong in saying, that Jesus sacrificed himself *in the end of it*; for surely that period was not the end of the world, which passed away eighteen hundred years ago! But the truth

is, Paul was perfectly accurate in what he wrote. He knew nothing about the english sense of his words; for there were neither englishmen, nor english words in his day. He penned Hebraisms in Greek words; that is, he put the things God had taught Israel into a Greek dress. He wrote "the things of the spirit" in the words of the spirit selected from the Greek language. What he said in the text before us was, "but now once for all *ἐπι συντελεια των αιωνων* *at the end of the ages* hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself." The constitution of Mount Sinai was the founding of the Hebrew world, or *κοσμος*; because it ordered, or arranged, the things pertaining to Israel, as a system *sui generis*. This system had *times peculiar to itself* which were appointed at the promulgation of the law. These are termed in scripture *αιωνες*, that is, *aions*, from *αι* *always* and *ων* *passing*. The etymology of *αιων* does not express the duration of the time; its continuance is defined by the Mosaic law. The Hebrew Commonwealth *under the Sinaitic constitution* was not intended to continue always. The time of its existence was predetermined of God, but not revealed in the law, or the prophets, but "reserved in His own power" (Acts 1:7; Mk. 13:32). It is termed *αιων*; and its approaching termination *συντελεια του αιωνος*, *the end of the time*, that is, of the Hebrew Commonwealth under the Mosaic law. But, though the precise duration of this *great time* (1697 years) was kept secret; the *lesser times*, or *αιωνες*, *aions*, of which it was composed, were very minutely specified as in the case of the Jubilees; so that the whole time of the commonwealth was the *αιων των αιωνων*, the *aion of the aions*, the time of the times, or age of the ages. Hence, while the Lord Jesus designated the consummation as *the end of the time*; Paul indicated it as *the end of the times*, or ages.

That the delivering of the law was the beginning of the *αιων*, or Hebrew world, is obvious from the words of Peter. Addressing the men of Israel, he said, "God will send Jesus Christ to you: whom the heaven must retain *until* times (*χρονων*) of reconstitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets *απ' αιωνος* *from the age*: for Moses truly said to the fathers," &c. (Acts 3:20-21). In the authorized version *απ' αιωνος* is rendered "*since the world began*." If this be preferred, it is evident that the world referred to was coeval in its beginning with Moses; for he is cited as the first of the holy prophets by whose mouth God spoke of the reconstitution of the Hebrew commonwealth at the appearing of Christ from heaven. Paul refers to the same epoch, saying, "the fellowship of the mystery hath been hid in God *απο των αιωνων* *from the ages*;" in the common version, "*from the beginning of the world*" (Eph. 3:9). From the beginning of the age, or of

the ages, is the correct rendering of the Greek in these texts. They both refer to the beginning of the commonwealth of Israel in the giving of the law from Sinai.

To speak in the vernacular, *God promised eternal life to man before the world began*. Such a statement as this would be incomprehensible to a mere english reader; yet such is the import of the saying, “God, who cannot lie, promised eternal life before the world began (*προ χρονων αιωνων*); but *in due times* (*καιροις ιδιοις*) hath manifested His word by preaching” (Tit. 1:2-3). To whom did He promise it? Certainly not to any one before the formation of man. The world referred to cannot therefore be that founded in the six days; but a constitution of things long subsequent to it. A literal translation removes all difficulty. The phrase *προ χρονων αιωνων* is *before the aionian times*; that is, before the times of the Hebrew commonwealth were arranged, God promised eternal life; and in *καιροις ιδιοις* *definite times*, such times, namely, as are particularized in Daniel (Dan. 9:24-26), He made His word, which had before been a hidden mystery, manifest (Rom. 16:26) through the apostolic preaching.

In the parable of the sower (Mat. 13:37-40), the phrase “*the world*” is used in different senses, which are not distinguished in the english version. Jesus says there, “*the field is the world.*” Did he mean it was the “whole habitable,” “the age,” or the Israelites; for *world* is applied to them all? If it had been the first, he would have said “the field is the *ολη η οικουμενη*”; if the second, “the field is the *αιων*,” and if the third, “the field is the *κοσμος*.” The last is the record in the case. He represents himself as the sower; and says that the seed which he sowed was “the word of the kingdom;” that it was “good seed;” and that he sowed it into the hearts of the Israelites, or “children of the kingdom,” of whom there were two classes, good and bad (Mat. 8:12). These, then, were the field, and therefore the *κοσμος*, or nation-world. But the enemy sowed tares into this field, which were to be gathered out and burnt. This conflagration was to be at harvest-time, concerning which Jesus said, “the harvest is *the end of the world.*” Did he mean the end of the nation-world? No; therefore he used another word, namely, *αιων* instead of *κοσμος*. The harvest was to be at the end of the *αιον συντελεια του αιωνος*; and not at the end of the *kosmos*, or extermination of the nation of Israel from among nations. The extinction of Israel from the earth will never take place; though a full end will be made of all other nations. But at the end of what *αιον* was the harvest to be? Jesus replies, “as the tares are gathered and burned in the fire at harvest time; so shall it be *εν τη συντελεια του αιωνος τουτου*,

in the end of *this* age." That is, in the end of the *aion* in which he flourished. Then he would send his reapers, namely, the Romans, his angels, or messengers (*αγγελοι*) of destruction, to "gather out of his kingdom" of Judea, all the tare-like children of Israel, and cast them into the place of the Lord, "whose fire is in Zion, and His furnace in Jerusalem" (Isa. 31:9), where there should be wailing, and gnashing of teeth. When this should be accomplished the *aion* would be finished, and the commonwealth of Israel should "be no more until he should come whose right it is to reign" (Eze. 21:25-27). "Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father."

As Jesus sat on the Mount of Olives, his disciples asked him, saying, "*What shall be the sign of the end of the age — τι το σημειον της συντελειας του αιωνος*, or, in the common version, "of the end of the world?" He replied, "This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached *in the whole habitable* (*εν ολη τη οικουμενη*) for a testimony to all the nations: and then shall come the end" (Mat. 24:3, 14). Having said this, he gave them "*the sign*," namely, the standing of the abomination of desolation in the holy place, or city, as foretold by Daniel (Dan. 9:27). First, then, the gospel was to be fully preached to every creature by the apostles; and, afterwards, the sign was to appear. Did the apostles perform their work, or does it yet remain to be accomplished? Their pretended successors answer "*no*, they did not." They contend that there are vast regions which were unknown to the ancients, where the gospel has never been preached; and therefore, that, as it is to be preached to every creature, it is incumbent on them to do it; and that the end of the world will not come until they have converted all the nations to christianity! Hence, they have established societies *de propaganda fide* both Romish and protestant. Every principal sect has its missionary society, whose utopian speculation is the conversion of the world under the warrant of the apostolic commission! As if a command given to the apostles to preach *the gospel of the kingdom*, were a command given to modern missionaries to go and preach churchism and dissenterism, calvinism, arminianism, and popery, to all the world! But the apostles were not sent to "all the world" in the gentile acceptance of the phrase. They were sent to all the nations of the then habitable, or civilized, world; principally, and almost exclusively, comprehended in the limits of the Roman dominion. Nor were they sent under the idea of converting them nationally to the gospel; but to preach it *εις μαρτυριαν* for a testimony; that is, for their information, that disciples might be made among them all; so that a people might be taken out of them (*εξ εθνων*) for the administration of the affairs of God's kingdom

and empire upon earth (Acts 15:14). The apostles left nothing for “successors” to do under the commission given to them. They preached the gospel of the kingdom to “every creature” of the Roman nations; if not in the gentile sense of “every creature,” at least in the sense of the phrase as used by the Lord Jesus. I feel strong upon this point, sustained as I am by the direct testimony of scripture; which is worth all the theories, and all the logic of the schools *en masse*. The apostle, in speaking of the “*one hope of the calling*” (Eph. 4:4) contained “in the word of the truth of the gospel,” tells the Colossian believers (Col. 1:5-6), that “it had come to *all the world*” (*παρόντος εν παντι τω κοσμω*) in the sense of “every creature,” as appears in another verse (v. 23) of the same chapter. In this place, he says, “*the hope of the gospel was preached to every creature which is under the heaven.*” This was the result of some thirty years apostolic labor; for the epistle in which he makes the statement is assigned to the A.D. 62; which was about eight years before the desolating abomination appeared before the walls of Jerusalem, as “*the sign*” of the end of the age.

The gospel of the kingdom, so efficiently preached by the apostles, was soon after perverted by “men of corrupt minds” (2Tim. 3:1-8; 4:3-4; Tit. 1:10-14); whom Paul, who was very severe, but not too much so, upon this class of professors, styles, “seducing spirits, speaking lies in hypocrisy, and having their conscience seared as with a hot iron” (1Tim. 4:1-3). Let the reader consult the references following: Acts 15:14; Eph. 4:4; Col. 1:5-6, 23; 2Tim. 3:1-8; 4:3-4; Tit. 1:10-14; 1Tim. 4:1-3. These characters were the “successors” from whom modern apostles, and ambassadors of Christ, have originated. When the Hebrew commonwealth was broken up by the Romans, they claimed to be successors to the priests and Levites of the law, as well as to the apostles. Thus they united a worldly priesthood (for all Christ’s disciples are kings and priests, elected for the purposes of the approaching kingdom) with eldership; and became *a distinct order* unrecognized by the scriptures, by which they are repudiated as “reprobate concerning the faith.” This order of men, as I have already stated elsewhere, had the presumption to style themselves, *God’s heritage*, or “clergy;” as though He had a delight in them above all other professors! But with all their praying and preaching, and profession, neither they nor their successors, love the Lord; for they *do not obey* Him: and He has made obedience the test of love, as it is written, “love is the fulfilling of the law.” They corrupted, and perpetuate the perversions of the faith from age to age; therefore, says the scripture, “let them be accursed when the Lord comes” (1Cor. 16:22; Gal. 1:8-9; Matt. 7:21-23).

By the ministerial influence of this order of men multitudes departed from the faith; and by their accession to municipal and state authority, they were enabled to give political existence to the apostasy they had consummated. It is unnecessary to narrate the history of their evil deeds from the beginning to the present time. It would require volumes to do justice to their ignorance, hypocrisy, and crime. As ecclesiastical policemen they have kept the world in order for the advantage and behoof of the oppressors and destroyers of the earth; and have used the people for their own profit under pretence of "curing their souls." But, while this is undeniably true of the order, I am free to admit that there have been, and no doubt are, many sincere, honest, and moral, men, who bear the names of "clergyman," and "minister:" — many, who conscientiously believe their theories to be the true sense of scripture; and who would suffer the loss of all things, and life itself, rather than surrender what they believe to be the truth. There have been many such; and may still be, should occasion arise to necessitate their manifestation. These are men who are in advance of the systems by which they have been created "clergymen," and "ministers." Their position is an unhappy one. System has made them; and they conscientiously support and perpetuate the system, having been indoctrinated by their predecessors into the belief that the system is the religion of God! But, I have hope, that if this book fall into the hands of this respectable class of professors, it may be instrumental in opening their eyes to see the deception practised upon them by the traditions of their fathers. Sincerity, honesty, piety and morality, are good qualities without which no man can be saved. I admit they have all these. But they should remember, that Cornelius was as estimable a man as they; and had the advantage of them in this, that his character was attested of God by the mouth of a special messenger from heaven; whereas they have no attestation beyond what is purely human. Now, piety and God-fearing did not save Cornelius; they only commended him to God's remembrance. It was necessary for him to believe words, and to be baptized in the name of the Lord, as I have already shown. These words were the gospel of the kingdom of God and His Christ. This necessity has never been abrogated. It is in full force to this day. Clergy and ministers do not believe it. Much of it they sneer at as "the millennial *hypothesis*." If they would attain to the kingdom of God, they must believe the doctrine concerning it. Martyrdom for opinion's sake is no substitute for "the obedience of faith." It is self-deception to say, that God is with us to the end of the world, when we neither understand, nor believe and obey, the truth.

Lastly, the clergy and ministers of the age, being utterly ignorant of the

gospel of the kingdom, are plainly not the persons referred to in the commission. The Lord is not “*with them*,” and without his co-operation, were they as enlightened and faithful as the apostles themselves, they could do nothing (Jn. 15:5). They point to what *is done* among the heathen in proof of His being “with them.” But, there is nothing done there as it ought to be done; or, as things were done when the Lord worked with the apostles. Their missionary societies are but so many institutions for the intellectual, moral, and, social, training of the heathen in the civilization of European and American religionists. They make protestants and catholics of the natives; but beyond this they cannot go. They may extend the civilization of Japheth into the tents of Shem, and compel Ham to be their servant; but to beget them in Christ Jesus *through the gospel*, and so to induct them into the heirship of the kingdom of God, is a thing they could as soon accomplish as to still the raging of the sea. If by their labors they were to make all the earth like England and America, it would still need to be converted to the religion of Christ. Ecclesiastics have done all they are able to do in “civilized” communities. They are powerless for progress among these; and men of naturally strong minds are either indifferent to their ministrations, or have repudiated them altogether. They lack one thing, namely, the knowledge of “the truth as it is in Jesus.” In default of this they occupy the minds of the people with foreign enterprizes, benevolent institutions, public meetings, platform and pulpit oratory, fancy fairs, and all sorts of devices to raise the wind to keep the machine in motion. But all will not do. The people begin to flag. The masses take no interest in their preaching. Their churches are cold, formal, and deathlike. Their “spirituality” is gone; and, unless the Lord come to raise the dead, both priests and people will be beyond the reach of cure.

Apostolic succession, then, especially through such a channel, is a mere figment of the carnal mind. The only succession of which any scriptural idea can be formed is, the following in the steps of the apostles’ faith; which no one, who understands the word of the kingdom, would affirm of the ecclesiastical guides of the people. The power and authority of the apostles died with them. Those *who succeed to their faith* are their successors only in this sense. Their word, which is also the Lord’s word, dwells in such richly in all wisdom; and where the word of the Lord is found, there, by the belief of it, He dwells in the hearts of men. When they work according to this word, they and their Lord work together. But this is not peculiar to a ministerial class; but is common to all the Lord’s people; for He is no respecter of persons. A successor to the faith of the apostles delights to feel that he is a layman; that he is one of the flock; and

#### SHEPHERDS OF THE LORD'S PEOPLE

the best of the sheep it contains, because his sole anxiety is to know and obey the great shepherd's voice (Heb. 13:20; Jn. 10:27). He is not a wolf, nor a dog, rending, and devouring, the flock, and investing himself with its wool; but one who would be the servant of the least, that he may be exalted to an unfading crown of glory, when the good shepherd shall appear to give life to all his sheep for evermore.